



# 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Regiment

5425 East McDowell Road

P.O. Box 60512

Phoenix, Arizona 85082-0512

(602) 267-2481 DSN 853-2481



22 February 2002

Pamphlet  
Number 870-5

Historical Activities

## Arizona Army National Guard The First One Hundred Years

This Pamphlet is one in the series of historical documents assembled for publication by the 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Regiment Association. Recognizing that yesterday and today's achievement is tomorrow's history, these pamphlets document and record significant activities, events and occurrences in the Arizona Army National Guard and the Arizona Artillery. Questions or comments should be addressed to the above office.



Compiled and Edited By Colonel (Ret) John L. Johnson  
Associate Editor Colonel (Ret) Charles G. Kroger, Command Historian

This Pamphlet supersedes all previous editions

**Table of Contents**

*Page*

<b>Acknowledgements . . . . .</b>	<b>4</b>
<b>Introduction . . . . .</b>	<b>6</b>
<b>The Civil War . . . . .</b>	<b>9</b>
<b>The Indian Menace . . . . .</b>	<b>11</b>
<b>Raising the Arizona Volunteer Infantry Regiment. . . . .</b>	<b>14</b>
<b>Arizona Volunteers Begin Duty . . . . .</b>	<b>19</b>
<b>Camp Life . . . . .</b>	<b>25</b>
<b>Discharge. . . . .</b>	<b>28</b>
<b>The Organized Militia . . . . .</b>	<b>33</b>
<b>Spanish American War . . . . .</b>	<b>41</b>
<b>Organizing the National Guard . . . . .</b>	<b>44</b>
<b>Border Service. . . . .</b>	<b>51</b>
<b>World War I . . . . .</b>	<b>55</b>
<b>The Growing Year . . . . .</b>	<b>57</b>
<b>World War II . . . . .</b>	<b>66</b>
<b>Panama. . . . .</b>	<b>67</b>
<b>Down Under . . . . .</b>	<b>68</b>
<b>Wakde Sarmi. . . . .</b>	<b>69</b>
<b>Noemfoor . . . . .</b>	<b>71</b>
<b>The Philippines . . . . .</b>	<b>73</b>

<b>Batangas</b> . . . . .	<b>76</b>
<b>The Bicol</b> . . . . .	<b>78</b>
<b>Sorsogon</b> . . . . .	<b>79</b>
<b>Camalig</b> . . . . .	<b>80</b>
<b>Mount Isarog</b> . . . . .	<b>82</b>
<b>Off to Yokohama</b> . . . . .	<b>83</b>
<b>Back Home</b> . . . . .	<b>84</b>
<b>White Plan, Fire Support Subsystem</b> . . . . .	<b>91</b>
<b>Desert Strike</b> . . . . .	<b>96</b>
<b>Emergencies on the Home Front</b> . . . . .	<b>105</b>
<b>Retiring the Colors</b> . . . . .	<b>109</b>

## **Acknowledgements**

**This Pamphlet covers the one hundred year history of the Arizona Army National Guard through its beginning in 1865 as the First Arizona Volunteer Infantry Regiment through the deactivation of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry in December 1967. Many significant and historical events probably occurred that are not noted herein, for those missed, we all must take blame because of poor records keeping, neglect of recording those events or our ignorance of history as it occurred.**

**The significant donors of information for this pamphlet must be recognized for the effort and sacrifice required on their part to research, document and record in the basic contents recorded herein. Anyone who has ever conducted research through historical records to capture the background, time, names, places, and events will understand the amount of cussing, blood, sweat and tears required to accomplish this task.**

**Special recognition to Mr. Lonnie Edward Underhill for his research and documentation of the important period of history on the first militia unit in the illustrious lineage of the Arizona Army National Guard. Recent Arizona historians have said little about the Arizona volunteers of the First Volunteer Infantry Regiment mustered into service in 1865. Mr. Underhill's thesis attempts to make their contribution to the settling of the early Arizona Territory a matter of record. This thesis was submitted to the History Department, University of Arizona, for his Master of Arts degree and was based on a hitherto little or unused set of documents. These documents were drawn from the Arizona Division of Library, Archives, and Public Records, Arizona Historical Society, University of Arizona Library Special Collections, Arizona State University Arizona Collection, and the National Archives. The material of the National Archives included muster rolls, pension records, regimental papers, and pertinent military correspondence files. The poor condition of many of these records required numerous hours of research with a six-inch magnifying glass to decipher them.**

**Colonel Orville A. (Speedy) Cochran was born on 22 October 1911 in Rifle, Colorado. Colonel Cochran served in several staff and command assignments in the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry and was later transferred to the Headquarters Staff of the Arizona National Guard, both militarily and as a State employee. Colonel Cochran served in that assignment until the time of his retirement whereupon he was appointed as Colonel (for Life) in the Arizona National Guard. Colonel Cochran worked in the Adjutant General's office as Chief Clerk in charge of the File Section prior to mobilization in 1940. After return from World War II, Colonel Cochran was the Public Information Officer in the Arizona National Guard Headquarters. He was an outstanding soldier and gentleman who devoted himself to recording the previously used abbreviated History of the Arizona National Guard and detailed History of the Arizona Artillery, 1920 - 1955.**

**Reproduced in its entirety herein is the book, "The Story of the Bushmasters", by Roy Lancaster. In World War II, Mr. Lancaster was one of the "Selectees" rushed from the draft boards in the United States to their assignment with the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry. As stated in his book, The 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry was composed of a cross section of Arizona men; Indians of some twenty-odd tribes, Mexicans, and native-born Americans of all national descents made up its companies when it mobilized in 1940. After arriving in Panama in 1942 the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry ceased to be exclusively an Arizona outfit. It became a unit of tough young Americans from every state and every section, from every occupation and every field. Mr. Lancaster is a member of the Bushmaster association, and with his book out of print, has authorized the reproduction of his book twice, once by the Arizona National Guard Historical Society and also by the Bushmaster Association on the 50<sup>th</sup> Anniversary of their mobilization for World War II.**

Thanks to Lieutenant Colonel Robert J. Freuler (Deceased). Colonel Freuler retired from the Wisconsin Army National Guard where he served as a Field Artillery Battalion Commander and senior Staff Officer. He moved to Arizona in 1986 after retiring from American Telephone and Telegraph (AT&T) and immediately volunteered to serve as the curator, Arizona Military Museum. During the eight years that he served in that capacity, he spent hundreds of hours of his own time researching the history of the early militia and Arizona Guard, covering many of those periods where little or no information was assembled and recorded.

Particular thanks for the assistance and input furnished by former members of the 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion and 180<sup>th</sup> Artillery, jokingly known as members of the Order of Ancient Artillerymen. The capturing of written and oral history was an enjoyment, which also became a remembrance of many good times, bad times and things forgotten. Often the deeds or activities were embellished, especially if being recorded over a cold beer or two, but later reviewed and edited in the interest of historical accuracy. Many occurrences recorded during these sessions, although accurate and historical in nature, were purposely excluded in the interest of propriety and reverence of the living.

News archives and articles available from newspapers for the time periods, plus government and private Internet sites, provided vast amounts of information to include particular events, dates and/or individuals. Other contributors of information, publications or documents are recognized in the additional reference publications listed below. Last, but not least, thanks to MSG (Ret) Del Taylor for time and effort required in making the files, records, Orders, Morning Reports, etc. in the Arizona National Guard Records Center available for research and information. Del's appreciation of the historical significance of records under his care, plus his willingness to assist, always made it a pleasure to visit the Records Center and review the past, while researching the thousands of records maintained in his safekeeping.

I apologize for any areas not researched in greater detail and activities or actions not included, but this history has become a task never completed. Every day, week or month during the past two years would bring forth something new or an item missed that adds to the history of the Arizona Army National Guard and therefore required research and recording. The end comes when you just finally say, "That's it!" - - and hope that another interested person or organization will update and revise this history sometime in the future.

The following publications are available for reference or additional information:

Thesis, First Arizona Volunteer Infantry Regiment  
First Arizona Volunteer Infantry Regiment Genealogy Records  
Lonnie E. Underhill  
(Above publications available in Arizona Military Museum Library)

Adjutant's General Reports, 1865 - Present (those available)  
(Arizona Military Museum Library)

Book, Story of the Bushmasters (Out of print)  
Roy Lancaster

Bushmasters, America's Jungle Warriors (out of Print)  
Anthony Edwards

180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Regiment Historical Pamphlets:

Pamphlet 870-2, White Plan, Fire Support Subsystem  
Pamphlet 870-3, Exercise Desert Strike, Colorado River War II  
Pamphlet 870-4, The Arizona Artillery  
Part I, The Early Years, 1919-1953  
Pamphlet 870-6, First Arizona Volunteer Regiment of Infantry

## **Introduction**

**Older than our nation, the National Guard has the longest continuous history of any military organization in the United States. Its origin traces back to the early 17<sup>th</sup> century. Early settlers were quick to recognize their obligation to give part time personal services to the protection of the life and property they enjoyed. From the homes and farms of individual communities, men voluntarily joined together to form trained bands and companies. These protective groups, born of necessity, were strictly local and spontaneous, neighbors joining hands in a common cause.**

**The oldest National Guard, however, was not formed in the United States. The Puerto Rican National Guard, a part of the National Guard of the United States, claims as its ancestry the early militia organized in 1510. It's first commanding officer was none other than Ponce DeLeon. The militia fought the Indian wars and with the Spanish troops repelled the attacks by the French, English and Dutch invaders. The earliest regiments in the United States are the 182d Infantry of Massachusetts, organized in 1634, known as the "Old North Regiment," and the 176<sup>th</sup> Infantry of Virginia, organized in 1652. Lieutenant Colonel George Washington later commanded the latter when they marched out to resist the French in the Ohio River Valley in 1754. That same regiment during the Revolutionary War had such commanders as Colonel Patrick Henry and Lieutenant Colonel John Marshall.**

**It was on 16 August 1824 that the name "National Guard" was first applied to the State Militia. On that day, New York units took the title of "National Guards" in compliment to Lafayette who was visiting the United States. Lafayette had commanded the National Guard in Paris in 1789.**

**To most of our citizens, the National Guard is the Militia. The Militia now includes, according to the Arizona State Code, revised in 1951, every able-bodied citizen of Arizona, both male and female, between the ages of 18 and 45 years. The organized militia includes the Armed Forces of the United States, including such reserve units as the National Guard and Organized Reserve of the Army, Navy, Marine Corps and the Air Force. The unorganized militia includes the remainder of the able bodied persons 18 to 45 years of age.**

**Most citizens don't realize that the early history of Arizona can generally be considered military history. This history would begin with the introduction of the military into this part of the world following the entry of Fray Marcos de Niza in 1539, the march north by Francisco Vasquez de Coronado's Military Expedition in 1540. This expedition explored through Eastern Arizona to the Grand Canyon and along the Colorado River, to a point just above present day Yuma. Although he changed the course of history, Coronado died in obscurity at the age of 42. But today, thanks to an inspired bit of diplomacy on the part of the United States, Don Francisco Vasquez de Coronado, who searched vainly for the Seven Cities of Cibola, has a monument to his name, The Coronado National Memorial in Southern Arizona. Continuing on with the settling of the West, the Mexican War, the Civil War, and of course throughout all of this the Indian Wars, which lasted until 1886 in the Arizona Territory, all have armed conflict or military significance.**

**The history of the subjugation of hostile Indians in the southwestern United States (Arizona) during the nineteenth century primarily has been fragmented and sketchy because of its comparatively short duration. It is amazing how little today's generation know about the early history of Arizona and the rough and tumble Arizona Territory. Few people recognize or understand the impact of the Indian Wars in the territory, probably because Cochise or Geronimo didn't kill or maim their grandparents, great grandparents or other relatives; most of today's Arizona residents came from somewhere else at a much later time.**

**Throughout the years everyone has read about or watched on TV, the Apache horror and the Indian raids on the early settlers, the military and movie actor John Wayne. This recorded**

period in our history seems to neglect or minimize many of the significance facts regarding the impact of the Indian Wars on the settlers and military in early Arizona. The campaigns in Arizona were fought with minor conflicts and small battles due to the elusiveness and fighting tactics of the Indian. This era was years of great hardship and turmoil for the early families, with little of the recognition given to troops and their battles to defeat the hostile Apaches during their rampage. Everyone knows about Cochise and Geronimo, but who ever heard of Bernard J. D. Irwin or Will C. Barnes?

The first Medal of Honor awarded by the U.S Military was awarded to Bernard J. D. Irwin, Assistant Surgeon, U. S. Army, for gallantry at Apache Pass, Arizona, 13-14 February 1861. Surgeon Irwin was born 24 June 1830, in Ireland and entered service at New York. The Medal was not issued until 24 January 1894. The citation for the award reads, "Voluntarily took command of troops and attacked and defeated the hostile Indians he met on the way. Surgeon Irwin volunteered to go to the rescue of 2d Lt. George N. Bascom, 7th Infantry, who with 60 men was trapped by Chiricahua Apaches under Cochise. Irwin and 14 men, not having horses began the 100-mile march, riding mules. After fighting and capturing Indians, recovering stolen horses and cattle, he reached Bascom's column and helped break his siege."

Local residents probably wonder why the Buttes at Papago Park are named "Barnes Butte" and the U.S. Army Reserve Center on Oak Street is named the "Will C. Barnes Reserve Center." These are named for Will Croft Barnes, Private First Class, Signal Corps, U. S. Army, who was awarded the Medal of Honor on 8 November 1882. Private First Class Barnes was born in San Francisco, California in 1858. Growing up in Nevada and Indianapolis, he later returned to San Francisco. He joined the Signal Corps in 1879 and was assigned to Fort Apache as telegrapher and operator of the meteorological station. In September 1881 Barnes assisted in the defense of the fort from an Indian attack while Colonel Carr, Commander of Fort Apache, and most of the garrison were gone to capture Apache medicine man Nock-aye-Klinney at the Indian village on Cibique Creek. The award was for heroism at Fort Apache, Arizona, 11 September 1881, citation simply reads, "Bravery in action." In the spring of 1883, Barnes, by then a Sergeant, received the medal in a retreat ceremony at Fort Apache. After receiving a medical discharge in 1883, he began cattle ranching near St. Johns, Arizona Territory. He served in the Arizona Territorial House of Representatives and accomplished the formation of Navajo County. A member of the U. S. Geographical Board from 1920-1930, Barnes spent his later years travelling and writing. His best-known work is Arizona Place Names, published in 1935. He died in 1936 and is buried in Arlington National Cemetery.

Leonard Wood, Assistant Surgeon, U.S. Army, a name that many should still recognize. He was awarded the Medal of Honor in the Apache campaign, summer of 1886. Citation reads: "Voluntarily carried dispatches through a region infested with hostile Indians, making a journey of 70 miles in one night and walking 30 miles the next day. Also for several weeks, while in close pursuit of Geronimo's band and constantly expecting an encounter, commanded a detachment of Infantry, which was then without an officer, and to the command of which he was assigned upon his own request." General Wood made his greatest contributions to the Army and the Nation while assigned as Chief of Staff. He strengthened the General Staff and firmly established the Chief of Staff as the senior officer of the Army. Fort Leonard Wood, Missouri is named after General Wood.

In addition to the award of the Medal of Honor to General Leonard Wood, Surgeon Irwin and Private First Class Barnes, there was forty- eight other recipients of this Medal for duty during the Indian Wars in Arizona. These included Sergeant Alchesay, Chief of the White Mountain Apaches, Indian Scout for General Crook. Sergeant Alchesay's citation reads, "Gallant conduct during campaigns and engagements with Apaches, winter of 1872-7."

Arizona's Regiment of proud tradition was born 2 September 1865 as the First Arizona Volunteer Infantry Regiment. Later as the First Arizona Infantry Regiment, it was designated as the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment in 1917 during World War I, reorganized and redesignated the 158<sup>th</sup> Regimental Combat Team (RCT) during World War II. Reactivated in the Arizona National Guard after World War II, the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry ceased to exist 7 December 1967, when it's troops were

reorganized as Military Police and other units required by the United States in revised defense planning.

In recording this history it is easy to see where the residual strength comes from within the guard and particularly the Arizona National Guard. As you record the name of an individual as an officer elected to his position, appointed by the Governor, graduate of Officer Training School, or by direct commission, you continue to come across the individual in later years as a commander, senior staff officer, the Adjutant General or even Governor. You might first notice their names before or during the Spanish American War, Mexican Border Service, World War I or World War II and still later they continue as an active member for many years after this initial service. Even today you will notice many of their names on street signs throughout valley communities. The Arizona National Guard built on those individuals' experience and knowledge. Whether the individual was strong, mediocre or weak, their tenure of service provided the ability to build this great organization on their collective experience.

John L. Johnson  
Colonel, AUS Retired

## **The Civil War**

When citizens of the United States first entered the Southwest, the Apaches were at first inclined to consider them as allies against their bitter enemies, the Mexicans. Even though in the 1830s there had already been clashes with American "scalp hunters", e.g., James Johnson and James "Don Santiago" Kirker, those Americans were basically operating under authority of the Mexican flag, and so the Apaches considered such individuals as non-representative of the United States. Then, of course, came the Mexican War, 1846-1848. Again, it appeared that the "Americans" could be Apache allies in their struggle against Mexico.

It wasn't until the 1850s that the United States finally realized that the Apaches were going to cause serious problems. Apaches continued to raid Mexico, and Mexico consequently put pressure on the U.S. to cease the raids. Settlers in New Mexico and Arizona, Mexican and American alike, became particularly insistent that Apache raiding stop. In Arizona by 1857 the United States finally decided to garrison a post just north of the Sonoran border, near modern-day Patagonia, Arizona,--Fort Buchanan. Because the outpost was isolated and difficult to maintain, it was basically ineffective in stopping raids and was abandoned at the outset of the Civil War.

On 28 February 1862, Captain Sherod Hunter's 100-man company of Arizona Rangers, from the Confederate Army of Texas Volunteers, occupied Tucson. The people of Tucson, sick of raids by desperados, Mexican bandits and Apaches, received his men cordially and without incident, though they failed to display any particular devotion to the strange banner that the rebels carried. Union sympathizers were given the choice of swearing allegiance to the Confederate States or leaving the territory. Hunter took what supplies he needed at Tucson then proceeded to the Pima Villages where he arrested a miller named Ammi White and took 1,500 sacks of wheat. He gave the wheat to the Indians since he didn't have any wagons to haul it away.

While at the Pima villages Hunter also captured Captain William McCleave and nine men who were scouting ahead of the California Volunteer Union Army Column. Captain William P. Calloway and troops under him were sent to rescue Captain McCleave but arrived too late. On the way, Captain Calloway's troops came across Confederates destroying hay at Stanwix Station about 80 miles east of Yuma. Shots were exchanged and a California soldier, Private William Semmilrogge, was wounded before the rebels retreated. This encounter at Stanwix Station was not a battle of the size of Gettysburg or Bull Run, but it was the western-most skirmish between soldiers during the Civil War. From the Pima Villages, Captain Calloway sent two lieutenants with cavalymen to capture Confederates still in the area.

At Picacho Pass, about 45 miles northwest of Tucson, Captain Hunter left Sergeant Henry Holmes in command of nine privates. The mission of these ten men was to warn Captain Hunter of any attempt by the Union troops to move on Tucson. On 15 April 1862, the two forces met. A fierce battle was fought that lasted only a few minutes. Lieutenant James Barrett and two Union privates were killed and three others wounded. No Confederates were killed but two were wounded and three captured. The remaining Confederates escaped to Tucson. The California Column moved into Tucson on 20 May 1862 without a shot being fired. Captain Hunter had departed two weeks earlier, realizing that his small force was no match for the 1800-man California Column.

The biggest battle of the Civil War in Arizona was fought on 15 July 1862; twenty miles south of present day Wilcox at Apache Pass. Apaches led by Mangas Coloradas and Cochise ambushed the second detachment of 126 California Volunteers. As the soldiers approached a spring of water,

the Indians fired on them from behind the rocks along the rim of the canyon. The "Battle of Apache Pass" was a victory for the troops since they lost only two killed and three wounded. Estimates of Apache losses vary from 10 to 68. The California Column of Volunteers established Fort Bowie on its way to New Mexico after a detachment was sent to protect the spring at Puerto de Dado. This is the fort where field artillery was first used against the Apache at the Battle of Apache pass in June of 1862. After stubborn resistance, bursting howitzer shells finally dislodged the Apache. It became the focal point of operations against Geronimo and the Apache. From 1867-1886 there were constant skirmishes with the Apache renegades Victorio, Nana, Juh, Geronimo, Loco and Natchez.

One of the earliest large engagements of U.S. troops against Apaches occurred in May 1863. In that month Lieutenant Thomas T. Tidball from Fort Lowell in Tucson, and a prominent Mexican citizen of Tucson, Jesús María Elías, led a force that killed fifty Apache warriors on Aravaipa Creek. Still another important battle took place in January 1864 between Yavapais and Apaches under a leader known as Paramucka. This was the infamous engagement at "Bloody Tanks." Some historians think it happened near what is now the town of Miami, Arizona, while others feel it took place in Fish Creek Canyon in the Superstitions.

King Woolsey, leader of an American expedition of civilians out of Prescott, requested a meeting with Indian leaders. Six responded and came out the mountains to talk. After all were seated, Woolsey signalled his men to kill every Indian possible. So many Indians were killed that the stream where the engagement took place ran red with the blood of those who died--thus the name "Bloody Tanks." It was a horrifying precursor of what was to come.

The Arizona Territory was a remote land in 1864. The principal population centers were in Tucson and in the Santa Cruz Valley, along the Colorado north of Yuma, and in the newly opened gold fields in the Prescott vicinity. All three regions owed their continued existence to mining activity. Agricultural activity included supplying cattle, sheep and basic foods to meet local need of the miners and soldiers.

The California Volunteers had occupied Arizona in 1862. Their mission had been to retake the forts in Arizona and New Mexico, drive out Confederate forces and reopen the southern mail route, which had been abandoned at the outbreak of the Civil War. As prospectors and settlers were attracted to Arizona by recent gold strikes, hostile Indians pounced on them at every turn. The California Volunteers were thinly spread and unable to provide protection along the major wagon routes, let alone near the new mining camps. The need for additional military forces became apparent soon after creation of the new territory. While still in the East, Governor John A. Gurley and Chief Justice John N. Goodwin took steps to control the Indian menace in Arizona. In early March of 1863, Gurley and Goodwin petitioned President Abraham Lincoln for authority to raise two volunteer regiments; one of infantry and one of mounted riflemen, in their home states of Ohio and Maine, respectively, for service in Arizona.

Governor Gurley and Chief Justice Goodwin suggested raising a third regiment from California. At the expiration of the enlistment of these volunteers, which would be for three years or, the end of the Civil War, the soldiers could be discharged in Arizona with the hope that they might settle there. In this way within a few years, the territory would have sufficient population to protect itself without special assistance from the Federal government. The territorial leaders thought this military force in Arizona would provide security for emigrants' enroute to the pacific coast and strengthen military forces already stationed there. Also, a strong force would help establish law and order and promote the development of Arizona's mineral wealth. General Samuel P. Heintzelman endorsed Gurley and Goodwin's petition to Lincoln. Heintzelman, an Army officer stationed in Washington, D.C., who had served at Fort Yuma, California, agreed with the Arizona officials that 3,000 soldiers would be necessary to repel hostile Indian attacks in the new territory. He knew a good deal about mining in Arizona. Heintzelman stated that three years earlier several mining companies had been successfully operating in Arizona, but the Apaches had by constant "theft, murder and robbery compelled them to abandon the country with the loss of all their machinery, improvements and property."

The discovery of gold in central Arizona in the spring of 1863 called attention to the new territory. As news of the discovery spread through the Southwest, prospectors rushed to the new diggings. As they fanned out in all directions, they encountered hostile Indians. In October of 1863, General James H. Carleton, commanding the Military Department of New Mexico, established the Military District of Northern Arizona. This district contained all of the area north of the Gila River and east of the Colorado River, except the area occupied by Fort Mohave. In December he sent California volunteers to establish Fort Whipple near the strike, but they were unfamiliar with the habits of the Apaches and failed to protect the growing population of miners and prospectors. Fort Whipple was established in November 1863 one-mile northeast of Prescott in the Chino Valley. Cavalry and Infantry soldiers stationed there participated in many Indian engagements. The Whipple Barracks became the Headquarters for the Military Department of Arizona on April 15, 1870. The post was General George Crook's District of Arizona headquarters in 1882. Centrally located in the Territory, the fort had a major influence on all Indian affairs in the region.

## **The Indian Menace**

Status as a territory began with the signature of President Abraham Lincoln on the Congressional Act of 24 February 1863. Governor John N. Goodwin and several of the Arizona territorial office holders arrived at Fort Whipple on 22 January 1864. Soldiers escorting Goodwin had killed an Indian enroute to the new territory. This event provided Goodwin with first-hand knowledge of the dangers of the Apache menace which Americans living in Arizona had begun describing as the most pressing obstacle in their efforts to settle the new territory. Arizona territorial officials reached the Whipple vicinity in January of 1864. The official party had traveled west via Fort Leavenworth, Kansas and Santa Fe, where a detachment of New Mexico and Missouri Volunteers under Lieutenant Colonel Jose F. Chaves joined them. On his arrival, Goodwin explored for a site to locate the capital. By summer he had located a capital at Prescott, near Whipple, and ordered a census be taken. He learned that Arizona had a population of 4,573 persons, excluding Indians, living chiefly in three regions. The Tucson Area, comprising the land south of the Gila River, contained 2,377 persons; the La Paz and Colorado River area contained 1,157 persons; and the Prescott area, comprising the remainder of the territory, contained 1,039 persons. Miners and prospectors were active in southern Arizona, along the Colorado River between La Paz and Fort Mohave, and in central Arizona around Fort Whipple.

Major L. A. Armistead originally established Fort Mohave as Camp Colorado on April 19, 1859. Lieutenant Edward Beale recommended that they station the post on the east bank of the Colorado River near the head of the Mojave Valley. The Fort was established to provide a shelter for emigrants to California and a base for operations against the Mojave Indians. The Post was renamed Fort Mohave on April 28, 1859, abandoned on May 28, 1861 by order of Brigadier General Edwin V. Sumner for fear of the Confederate forces in the area. The buildings were burned down. May 19, 1863, the post was re-garrisoned and was assigned to protect the travelers along the Mojave and Prescott road and to cultivate friendly relations with the Indians; it is now part of the Fort Mojave Indian Reservation.

Within six months after locating the territorial capital at Prescott, Governor Goodwin turned his attention to the larger problems of providing adequate protection for settlers and miners throughout the territory. The California Volunteers had located several posts in Arizona in 1862, but they were thinly spread and could not control the serious threat on life and property by hostile Indians. The need for additional military forces had developed in May of 1863 with the discovery of gold in central Arizona.

Governor Goodwin and other territorial officials made repeated requests for increased Federal protection, but assistance came slowly. Ranchers in the vicinity of Prescott were particularly vulnerable to Apache raids the previous December; Indians had stolen a large number of cattle near Canon Springs, which were destined, for sale to miners. Two months later, fifty Pinal Apache raided the Agua Fria Ranch, owned by King S. Woolsey. The Indians hit the ranch at mid-day and drove off thirty head of cattle. They took all the animals except a yoke of oxen hitched to a plow and killed one or two others at the ranch. Woolsey was not home at the time.

Reporting the incident, the Prescott Weekly Arizona Miner, in early March of 1864, stated that Woolsey probably would organize a company "to hunt and punish the thieves . . . he is one of our most daring and skillful Indian fighters, and believes fully 'in the extermination policy.'" Indian attacks spread. Several days after the attack on the Agua Fria Ranch, they surprised miners in Randall's District on the Hassayampa River south of Prescott. They killed five Mexicans and three Americans and drove about twenty miners from their claims. When the miners reported this attack to Secretary of the Territory Richard C. McCormick, he requested the commander at Fort Whipple to detach twenty California Volunteers to patrol briefly in Randall's District in case the Indians returned.

When the volunteers prepared to return to Whipple, more than 100 miners signed a petition requesting a permanent military force be assigned to Randall's District. The District, they said, lay in an area rich in mineral wealth and agriculture in which they had expended a great deal of labor and money in opening claims and starting farms. The area suffered Indian attacks because of its isolation from other settlements. The petitioners asked Governor Goodwin to station permanently a small force of twenty to thirty soldiers in Randall's District as a base of operations in the neighborhood. In this manner, the miners could complete work on their claims and hopefully organize to defend themselves against the Indians. The depredations continued. A petition came from the Lynx Creek District. The citizens felt they were in constant danger from Indian attack and demanded that immediate measures be taken to ensure their safety. They requested Goodwin to take steps to keep open their lines of communication and supply, and to take steps to "subdue the Indians and render the country safe and habitable." A few days later, Indians overran the Sheldon Ranch twenty-five miles south of Prescott, drove off a dozen cattle and killed a herder, a Mr. Cosgrove. Twenty-five soldiers went to the ranch, but they failed to locate the Indians or the cattle. The commander at Fort Whipple furnished supplies for a group of soldiers to join the search, but the Indians had disappeared with all the cattle.

In late March of 1864, Governor Goodwin announced his determination to make Arizona safe and promised to subdue the "ruthless barbarians, whatever it may cost." He appointed King Woolsey as his military aide, with the rank of Lieutenant Colonel, and dispatched him on an expedition with nearly 100 men, including twenty who led the supply train, looking for hostile Indians. The men received rations and supplies at Fort Whipple, and enlisted a large number of Maricopa Indians to accompany them. The Maricopa were eager to strike the Pinal Apaches "a blow which will deter them from farther [sic] depredations in this vicinity." Wooley's expedition left his Agua Fria Ranch on the night of March 31 and stayed in the field until April 17. In two fights with Apaches, the party killed thirty and wounded fourteen Indians.

In June 1864, Woolsey again left Prescott with volunteers to scout Apache Indian Territory. Near the end of June he discovered a creek whose headwaters were in the Pinal Mountains. He therefore named the creek, "Pinal Creek." He made his main camp there and called it "Wheatfields," as Apache Indians raised crops there along the banks of Pinal Creek. The area is still called Wheatfields today. Meanwhile, Colonel Edwin Rigg at Fort Goodwin, about 60 miles to the east, detailed Major Thomas Blakeney to meet Woolsey at Wheatfields. When Blakeney arrived at what is now Six Shooter Canyon, he found a 14-year-old Apache boy who said he wished to give up his life as an Indian, as it was too hard. Blakeney took the boy, and, of course, his relatives came looking for him two days later. Major Blakeney refused to give the boy up. The next day, this same boy went out into the fields at Wheatfields to look for food. The boy was taken back by his people and this "kidnapping" outraged Blakeney. On that same day Woolsey arrived back again at Wheatfields from an expedition to Salt River Canyon. Major Blakeney and Woolsey's men were ordered to search out any male Apaches they could and to kill them. They then destroyed the Apache fields. Great bitterness arose among the Apaches as a result of this fiasco, and even Colonel Rigg was disgusted by the affair. He knew that there could no longer be any prospect of peace.

Arizona territorial officials finally convinced the War Department that additional troops were needed in Arizona to fight the Apaches. On February 10, 1864, Governor Goodwin had written President Lincoln a letter expressing concern over the Indian situation. The success of the new territory depended heavily upon curbing hostile Indian activity particularly in the mining and

ranching regions, he said. Escorts were needed to transport the mail and guard parties exploring the territory. The richest and most extensive mineral regions seemed to be to the east and south of Prescott and on the San Francisco and Salt Rivers. Indian attacks on prospecting parties and travelers had spread to the south, and herders everywhere guarded their livestock with utmost vigilance. In conclusion, Goodwin requested permission to organize a regiment from within the territory to replace the California Volunteers whose enlistments would end between August and September of that year. The Governor suggested native Arizonans who were familiar with the country and Apache warfare. He thought native Arizonans would be far more efficient than soldiers recruited elsewhere.

The territorial legislature also drafted a memorial to the United States Congress; the memorial requested an appropriation of \$250,000 to promote a war against the Apaches. The legislature felt the depredations of the Apaches were the "only barrier to a speedy settlement" of the territory. The workers of Governor Goodwin asked several congressional and military leaders for letters endorsing his request. Those contacted included Secretary of War Edwin M. Stanton, General Robert C. Schenck, Chairman of the House Military Committee, Major General Henry W. Halleck, General-in-Chief of the Army, and General Carleton, commanding the Department of New Mexico. In his endorsement, General Carleton supported the Governor's request to raise local troops, but doubted that "an entire volunteer regiment could be raised." Instead, Carleton suggested that more troops were needed in Arizona, but stated emphatically: "Until the Navajo War is off my hands, (soldiers) cannot be sent (from New Mexico)." General Carleton's endorsement of Governor Goodwin's request reached the War Department and the office of Provost Marshal General James B. Fry on April 11. On April 16, 1864, the War Department approved Goodwin's request to raise troops in Arizona. General Fry authorized the raising of one regiment of volunteer infantry in the Arizona Territory to serve for three years or for the duration of the Civil War. The Department of the Pacific, rather than the Department of New Mexico, which General Carleton had preferred, would handle the recruitment, organization and muster of the regiment. General-in-Chief Halleck concurred in General Fry's action. However, the War Department held up the authorization until it had shifted military jurisdiction of Arizona from General Carleton to the Department of the Pacific.

Several weeks before the War Department approved the Arizona regiment, Governor Goodwin had written Secretary of State William H. Seward requesting a ninety-day leave to visit the new commander of the Department of the Pacific in San Francisco. He had learned from the California officers in Arizona that ten new volunteer regiments were being organized in California and that one regiment might be sent to Arizona. Goodwin hoped that any new troops sent to the territory might be commanded and staffed with officers who had lived in Arizona and were acquainted with Indian warfare. Goodwin's request was denied and the matter of an Arizona volunteer regiment was shelved for the time being.

When the new Arizona legislature met in the fall of 1864, it passed two Acts to curb the Indian depredations. On November 7, Governor Goodwin signed "An Act Authorizing a Loan on the Faith and Credit of the Territory to Inaugurate and Pay the Expenses of a Campaign against the Apache Indians." By this Act the legislature would seek to raise \$100,000 in Indian War Bonds, to be repaid on January 1, 1885. The legislator's would try to negotiate the loan at eight per cent in gold at par value and at ten per cent annual interest. The bonds would be issued in amounts of \$50, \$100, \$250, and \$1,000. A board of territorial commissioners empowered to arrange for the sale of the bonds, included Governor Goodwin and legislators King S. Woolsey and John G. Capron. The legislature also approved "An Act Authorizing the Raising of Rangers." By this Act, signed on November 9, Governor Goodwin could raise six companies, not to exceed 600 men, for Indian service. These so-called rangers were to be under the direct command of the territorial governor. Expenses incurred on Indian campaigns would be paid from monies received from the sale of the territorial bonds.

The working of the mines, the establishment of farms, and the development of the territory depended upon the subjugation of the "barbarous foe so long a terror of the settlers" of Arizona. The board of territorial commissioners would use this money to conduct the war upon the Apaches then in progress. The United States Congress did not grant this request. Arizona

officials also learned that a territorial government could not obligate itself through local bonds to support a militia, and the act was repealed. No bonds were sold.

The Indian menace continued unabated. Prospectors, farmers, ranchers, and territorial officials all sensed the need to enlarge the military force in Arizona. But, the Federal government was deeply committed to fighting the Civil War and lines of communication between Arizona and Washington were extremely long and slow.

### **Raising the Arizona Volunteer Infantry Regiment**

Approval to raise a regiment of Arizona Volunteers came from the War Department in the spring of 1865. The recruitment of troops in Arizona had been delayed from April of 1864 to February of the next year while the Army reorganized its military departments in the West. On receiving proper authority from Washington, Arizona Governor Goodwin set into motion his plan for raising a regiment of five companies of native soldiers. Between September 2 and November 3, 1865, Federal mustering officers swore into service for one-year, approximately 350 men from the local Mexican, Pima and Maricopa populations. The soldiers were assigned to permanent duty soon after they were mustered.

In reorganizing the military department in the West, the War Department did transfer the Arizona Territory from the Department of New Mexico to the Military Division of the Pacific. The Pacific Division included the Department of the Columbia and the Department of California, the latter commanded by Major General Irvin McDowell. The Department of California now included the Military District of Arizona. In February of 1865, Provost Marshal General Fry in Washington, D.C. authorized McDowell to raise a regiment of volunteer infantry in Arizona for service there. Recruits could enlist for periods of one to three years. On February 25, General McDowell appointed Brigadier General John S. Mason to command the new District of Arizona. In early May of 1865, while conferring in Los Angeles with Generals Mason and McDowell, Governor Goodwin learned that Secretary of War Edwin M. Stanton had suspended all military recruiting, anticipating the end of the Civil War. On May 3, Goodwin and Mason sent a telegram to the War Department asking if the suspension affected Arizona. Secretary of War Stanton replied that the order exempted the Arizona regiment. The unit could be mustered into Federal service by July of that year, or as soon as the volunteer companies comprised between eighty and ninety-seven enlisted men and three officers. On learning the good news, Goodwin left for Arizona in late May with plans to call up the regiment.

At Prescott, The Governor moved quickly with the recruiting. He appointed William H. Garvin, of Prescott, as Adjutant General of the Arizona Volunteers, charging him with handling all official correspondence involving the new regiment. He then selected men who were well-known in the territory to serve as recruiting officers for six companies designated as A, B, C, D, E, and F. Recruiting for Company A would occur in Yavapai, Mohave, and northern Gila Valley and central Arizona. Companies B and C would come from the Gila Valley and Central Arizona. Recruiters would seek men for Company D from the Tucson area of Pima County. Companies E and F would be raised in southern Pima County along the Santa Cruz River and in the mining regions to the east of Tubac.

Goodwin asked Robert Postle, a farmer living near Fort Whipple to raise Company A within ninety days in Yavapai, Mohave and Yuma counties. Postle would serve, as a second lieutenant during the recruitment period and later would command the company with the rank of captain. Postle did not relish his task and on July 29, after having recruited only a few men, he resigned. Primitivo Cervantes, a miner from Prescott, assumed his duties. Cervantes enlisted thirty-five men from the Fort Whipple vicinity. Cervantes sent the men to First Lieutenant Charles Curtis, Company D, Fifth United States Infantry, at Whipple to await induction into Federal service. Twenty-five of the thirty-five men were Mexican born; many were from the Mexican State of Sonora, nine were from Hermosillo, the capital city. The remaining seven men indicated their origins as Germany, Ireland, England, Sweden, California and Illinois.

Thomas Ewing, a teamster at the Pima Villages, agreed to recruit Maricopa Indians from that vicinity to fill Company B. Ninety-seven Maricopas from the area around Maricopa Wells volunteered for duty. Six more later joined after the Maricopas had been serving at the newly established Fort McDowell. All 103 Indians gave their birthplace as Maricopa Wells. Governor Goodwin named John D. Walker, who also resided at the Pima Villages, to recruit Pima Indians for Company C. Walker had been a sergeant in the California Volunteers and had seen service in Arizona. Walker enlisted ninety-four Pimas from the Pima Villages.

On June 13, Governor Goodwin authorized James Lee, flour and saw mill operator at Tucson, to recruit men from Pima County for Company D. Because Lee experienced great difficulty in obtaining rations from the Army to subsist the few men he had recruited, he disbanded them and returned to his mill. Goodwin named no replacement for Lee and Company D was never organized.

Hiram S. Washburn, a trader living in the Patagonia mining region in southern Pima County, agreed to raise Company E at Tubac. From the few records written to or by Washburn, he began work on June 24 in the Santa Cruz Valley. The next month, he reported to Goodwin that he expected to have 100 men at Tubac by mid-August ready for induction. Washburn proudly predicted his recruits would be of the "first order in the art of Apache hunting". Washburn also selected officers for Company E. On July 6, he appointed Manuel Gallegos, formerly of New Mexico, as second lieutenant and on August 14, Oscar F. Hutton, a mining superintendent at the Mowry Mine, as first lieutenant. Lieutenant Gallegos had gained considerable experience fighting Apaches and familiarity with many Apache haunts in southeastern Arizona. In addition to Spanish, he spoke the Apache dialect. Washburn reported to Governor Goodwin that Lieutenant Gallegos had earned the complete confidence of the recruits, two of whom were his own sons.

Washburn thought recruiting men of Mexican descent for Apache service would promote amity and mutual confidence between Mexico and the United States. The Mexican recruits were in Washburn's opinion equal, if not superior, to any others he knew for Apache campaigning. Mexicans never before had had such an opportunity to avenge themselves on the Apaches. In July, Lieutenant Gallegos began recruiting men for Company E. He recruited at least twenty-six of his recruits in Bacuachi, Sonora. By August 21 the company had ninety-six men. On September 1, Washburn wrote inquiring why a mustering officer from San Francisco had not arrived to induct his men into Federal service.

As was the case at Fort Whipple, Washburn temporarily sent his recruits to the commander of a local unit. For Company E, this was Second Lieutenant William L. Innes, Seventh Infantry, California Volunteers, stationed at Tubac. At Tubac, the men erected their own quarters, but the lack of adequate shelter and blankets caused most of them to develop fevers and other illnesses. On August 23, Washburn moved his recruits to Fort Mason, near Calabasas, fifteen miles south on the Santa Cruz River. When the United States took possession of the territory south of the Gila River in 1853 as a result of the Gadsden Purchase, there was a Mexican fort near Calabasas. In June 1856 Dragoons under Major Enoch Steen marched from Tucson and occupied the old fort. Within a few months these troops were removed to Fort Buchanan. It was formally occupied by U. S. troops a second time with Union troops recruited near Santa Barbara, California, led by Captain Thomas Young. This First Battalion of Native Cavalry moved into the old fort on August 21, 1865, and named it Fort Mason for General John S. Mason of the California Volunteers, Military Commander of the District of Arizona, 1865-1866. These men had been stationed at Tubac, but the drenching rains "soon engendered fevers" and the move was made to Fort Mason. The name was changed to Camp McKee on September 6, 1866. Here the men again constructed shelters, and ten to twenty recruits were detailed daily to the commanding officer to prepare adobe bricks for the post headquarters. Sickness spread and Washburn often had difficulty in filling his work quotas. Continued illness among the soldiers caused the camp to be abandoned on October 1, 1866, when the troops were shifted to old Fort Buchanan.

Washburn's recruits continued to suffer from a lack of clothing, from inadequate shelter and from insufficient food. Because the Federal government had made no allowances for recruiting,

he used his own personal credit to make purchases at Tubac. He was never reimbursed for expenses incurred during July and August for his men. The volunteers had no cooking utensils and but half a dozen mess pans. The company had only four axes and two spades with which to construct shelters for protection from the frequent rainstorms. Arms and ammunition were promised, but none had arrived. Washburn dramatically described his men as "destitute" in his letters to Governor Goodwin. Many fell sick or succumbed to illness by "eating crude fruit and sleeping on the wet ground without blankets." During late August, he informed Goodwin that he had spent fifty dollars for food and medicine that "ought to have been furnished . . . from the hospital, and for which as yet no redress is promised." The men received no medical attention unless they were confined to the hospital, and only two men had been entitled to hospital care at Tubac. More than seventy men were doctoring themselves with herbs and roots, leaving camp duty to be performed by "the wellest (sic) of the sick." Although Company E received a small amount of clothing in late October, Washburn noted that the sickly and ragged condition of the men made them the "laughing stock of their countrymen far and near." A total of ninety-seven men enlisted in Company E at Tubac and at Fort Mason. Only three recruits were from the United States. The remainder were born in Sonora: twenty-two came from Arispe, sixteen from Bacauchi and eight from Fronteras.

With Company E filled, Washburn turned to raising men for Company F from the mining region east of Tubac. Although the recruiting proceeded more slowly than he anticipated, he stated confidently to Governor Goodwin that he could fill the company before the Federal mustering officer reached southern Arizona. He recommended as second lieutenant for the new company one Robert Medina, whom he regarded as an "old experienced Apache fighter," but Medina decided not to serve in Company F. Washburn turned over thirty-two recruits for Company F to Lieutenant Innes at Tubac. Only one man was from the United States. The others were born in Sonora, principally in the cities of Magdalena, Hermosillo, Santa Cruz, Oriz and Gyamas.

In the early fall of 1865, Federal induction of the Arizona Volunteers began. First Lieutenant William W. Tompkins, Third Infantry, mustered the first volunteers at Maricopa Wells. On September 2, Tompkins mustered ninety-four Maricopas into Company B. Lieutenant Innes added two men to the company on December 18 and First Lieutenant Samuel L. Barr, Fifth Infantry, who served as assistant commissary of musters for the Arizona Territory, mustered seven more on May 16, 1866. The total number mustered into Company B eventually was 103 enlisted men. At full strength, Company B consisted of five sergeants, eight corporals, eighty-four privates and six of unknown rank that were probably privates. Governor Goodwin appointed Thomas Ewing as first lieutenant and Charles Riedt as second lieutenant of Company B. Ewing, age twenty-eight, and Riedt, age forty, were mustered into federal service on September 2. Six days later, Lieutenant Colonel Clarence E. Bennett, First Cavalry, California Volunteers, commanding at Fort McDowell, recommended that Riedt be promoted to the rank of captain in Company B. Lieutenant Riedt spoke the language of the Maricopas fluently and Bennett considered him to be a competent and efficient officer. For all intents and purposes, lieutenant Ewing commanded the company from the beginning. However, on November 11, Juan Chevereah, Chief of the Maricopas, was appointed captain of Company B, but he assumed non-military duties. On August 8, 1866, Ewing was officially named to command Company B, a position that he had occupied since his induction into Federal service.

Lieutenant Tompkins also inducted eighty-nine men, Pima Indians, into Company C on September 2. On May 14, 1866, at Sacaton, Lieutenant Barr added five men. Company C eventually included ninety-four enlisted men and contained five sergeants, eight corporals and eighty-one privates. Officers in Company C included Captain J. Ross Browne, age forty, an Indian agency inspector from California and writer who was appointed on December 21, 1865. Browne did not serve with the Arizona Volunteers. He reported to Major Robert S. Williamson, Chief Engineer, Department of California, San Francisco, for topographical assignment. Captain Browne was discharged from service on April 1, 1866. Other officers included First Lieutenant John D. Walker, age twenty-seven, and Second Lieutenant William A. Hancock, age thirty-four.

John N. Coster, age thirty, formerly a first lieutenant in the Seventh Infantry, California Volunteers, and an aide-de-camp to Major General McDowell, was captain of the company from

April 1 to June 13, 1866, but he did not serve with the company either. First Lieutenant John Walker filled the position of captain of the company on June 20. On June 21, Lieutenant Hancock became first lieutenant, and Sergeant Antonio Azul, age thirty and chief of the Pimas, assumed the position of second lieutenant on August 1. From the date of his muster into service, Walker had commanded the company. Upon being inducted into service, Companies B and C reported to Colonel Bennett, commanding at Fort McDowell. Bennett sent uniforms to the volunteers at Maricopa Wells. Each Indian soldier received a blue blouse trimmed in red for the Maricopas and blue for the Pimas, one pair of blue pants, one pair of shoes and one yard of flannel for a headdress. Although both Pimas and Maricopas furnished their own horses, they received infantry pay and fed their horses at their own expense.

On October 7, 1865, at Fort Whipple, Lieutenant Tompkins mustered Company A into Federal Service. Second Lieutenant Cervantes commanded this company, containing Anglos and twenty-nine Mexicans from Prescott. No other officers were commissioned in Company A. Lieutenant Cervantes reached a site on the Clear Fork of the Verde with Company A in late October. This outpost, called Camp Lincoln, also on the Verde River fifty miles east of Prescott, had been established to protect neighboring farmers on the Verde from Apache depredations. Cervantes moved the site of the outpost one mile north of the Verde River and Beaver Creek Junction in Yavapai County. The camp was actively employed in offensive operations against the Apaches. During the next two months Cervantes sent many scouting expeditions into the nearby mountains.

Early in November, mustering officers arrived in southern Arizona to induct Companies E and F into Federal service. Lieutenant Tompkins mustered ninety-seven enlisted men into Company E on November 2, at Calabasas, near Fort Mason. Later on June 15, 1866, at Skull Valley southwest of Fort Whipple, Lieutenant Barr added two more men to the unit. Company E contained a bugler, five sergeants, eight corporals, and eighty-five privates. Company officers included Captain Hiram S. Washburn, age forty-five, First Lieutenant John M. Ver Mehr, age twenty-two, and Second Lieutenant Manuel Gallegos, age forty-five. Ver Mehr, who had come to Arizona from California in 1860, served as aide to General Mason and never joined Company E at Camp Lincoln. He resigned his commission on June 27, 1866. Lieutenant Tompkins inducted thirty-two men into Company F on November 3 at Calabasas. The company consisted of one sergeant, three corporals, and twenty-eight privates. Second Lieutenant Oscar F. Hutton, the commander, continued recruiting men for the company with the goal of reaching a complement of at least eighty men.

On December 4, 1865, Captain Washburn received orders to move Companies E and F from Fort Mason to Fort Whipple. That night six men deserted. The next morning, the company started north with nearly a third of its number on the sick list. Baggage and provisions were carried in wagons, but the column set out with the sick straggling along as best they could. The soldiers reached Tucson on December 8, Maricopa Wells on December 14, Wickenburg on December 22, and Fort Whipple on December 29, a journey of 183 miles in twenty-five days. Most of the soldiers had improved in health, but two died enroute to Fort Whipple. The men suffered from the bitter cold weather. As there were no quarters available for them when they reached Fort Whipple, they had to construct makeshift shelters. Washburn described the men as "truly pitiable."

By late December of 1865, the Arizona Volunteers were either enroute to or already at their duty stations. The newly inducted volunteers had endured many hardships during the muster period and during the march to their designated posts. Companies B and C at Maricopa Wells were the first assigned to duty. On September 4, 1865, Company C, Pimas, left Maricopa Wells with Colonel Bennett's command of California Volunteers to establish a fort on the Verde River. Bennett's troops cleared a wagon road from Maricopa Wells to the site selected for the new post. Company B, Maricopas, arrived at the site a few days later. Both companies helped construct Fort McDowell to serve as a buffer against Apache raids on farms along the Verde and Salt Rivers. The California Volunteers originally established Fort McDowell on September 7, 1865 on the west bank of the Rio Verde seven miles above the junction of the Verde with the Salt River. It was created to combat the local Indians of the surrounding mountains and was intended to be one of

the most solidly built posts in the Territory, but rains washed it away. The Camp was first called Campo Verde and is also erroneously indicated as Fort Badger. It was renamed Camp McDowell after Major General Irwin McDowell. The Fort Commanded a number of the more important trails that served the Apache of central Arizona and it was a place of embarkation for many expeditions to the east against the Tonto Apache. The Maricopas and Pimas subsequently campaigned against Apaches north and east of McDowell.

On January 2, 1866, Captain Washburn received orders to move Company E to Camp Lincoln, and take charge of the camp. On arriving at the second Camp Lincoln on January 16, 1866, Washburn directed Company A and Company E to build brush shelters and to prepare for scouting into the surrounding area to search for Apache camps. The trip from Prescott had taken longer than expected because Washburn's men had to move heavy loads of equipment and supplies with broken down mules over a mountain trail. Companies A and E scouted the mountains in all directions from Camp Lincoln. The Camp was renamed Camp Verde on November 23, 1868. The post was moved in 1871 to higher ground a mile south to improve the poor condition of the camp and was renamed Fort Verde on April 5, 1879.

From Whipple, Lieutenant Hutton moved Company F to an outpost in Skull Valley near Date Creek, southwest of the fort. Camp McPherson would be established here on January 23, 1867. It was created to protect travelers on the road from La Paz to Prescott. The volunteers in Company F occasionally scouted for Apaches, but they usually escorted wagon trains along the Prescott-LaPaz road. The post was moved north 25 miles and renamed Camp Skull Valley in March of 1867. On May 11, 1867, the camp was returned to its original location and renamed Camp Date Creek. Of the thirty men that had left southern Arizona, only eleven were well enough for duty. Nearly half of the men had no shoes, and had wrapped old rags around their feet. Many of them had not a "shirt on their body nor any drawers at all," because they had received no clothing since being in service. Of the number sick, eight or ten were considered in serious condition, suffering from ague, fever, and "the sickening condition of their feet and legs." Nearly all had severe coughs. The men knew little about their firearms, which they had received the day before they left southern Arizona.

Even before the companies were inducted, problems had beset the Arizona Volunteers. As early as September of 1865, General Mason, commanding the District of Arizona, received an order directing him to suspend recruiting as the War Department wished to reduce the number of recruits brought into Federal service. Mason did not act on the order immediately. Then in early October, Adjutant General Edward D. Townsend amended the order, stating that Lieutenant General Ulysses S. Grant had authorized the Arizona Companies already mustered into service to be retained until further orders, but "prohibited the muster of any more." On November 30, the mustering officer at Fort Mason finally received an order from General Mason suspending further recruiting. Colonel Charles W. Lewis, the post commander, halted the muster for Company F, keeping only those inducted on November 3. At that time, Lieutenant Hutton had increased the size of the company to eighty-five men. At Whipple, Lieutenant Cervantes had raised a similar number of recruits for Company A, but none were mustered after November 6, the day he received the Mason order.

Later in March of 1866, when General McDowell visited Arizona, he became aware of the problems caused by the suspension order. For example, the previous December recruiters at Fort McDowell enrolled several Pima and Maricopa volunteers but because of the order they had never been mustered. In one case a principal sub-chief in Company C had been dropped from the service, and this had caused dissent among the Pimas. McDowell recommended to General Mason that all persons be mustered as of the date they actually began service in the regiment. McDowell's superior, General Henry W. Halleck, commanding the Division of the Pacific, agreed. Halleck ordered all men enrolled at the time of the receipt of the August suspension order be mustered into Federal service as of the date of their enlistment. Special Order 44, May 11, 1866, District of Arizona, mustered five men of Company C and seven of Company B at Wickenburg on May 14 and 16 by Lieutenant Barr. Special Order 45, May 13, 1866, directed Barr to muster on June 15 two men of Company E who had been serving at Skull Valley with Company F.

After nearly three years of petitions by the governor, military leaders, and settlers in Arizona, relief from the Apache menace seemed to be at hand. The volunteer regiment of five companies consisted of just over 350 native Arizonans and nine officers. The volunteers were placed in service just as Apache raiding was reaching new heights in central Arizona. Their mission was clear: destroy Apache camps, crops, and supplies and kill all that resisted.

### **Arizona Volunteers Begin Duty**

The Arizona Volunteers fought several different Apache groups. The Pimas and Maricopas sought out Tonto Apaches in the region to the north of Fort McDowell. Numbering as many as fifty persons, these bands lived in huts and planted crops along mountain streams. On several occasions, the volunteers captured horses that they identified as having been stolen earlier from their own villages. On one expedition, they killed a very large Indian, who had in his possession a "fine American rifle." The soldiers at Camp Lincoln found Apaches living in primitive caves and cliffs. At Skull Valley, the soldiers encountered Apache Mojaves, who boldly stopped wagon trains along the Prescott-La Paz road. Armed variously with bows and arrows and rifles, they demanded horses and mules.

The first foray by Arizona Volunteers, Companies B and C from Fort McDowell, was against Apaches on September 8, 1865. Maricopa and Pima volunteers commanded by Lieutenant Riedt accompanied Colonel Bennett's California Volunteers on a scout northeast into the Tonto Basin in search of Apache rancheria, or camps. Seven days later, after traveling some 110 miles, an advance party of Company B surprised an Apache camp about nine miles east of Green Valley. They killed an Apache and wounded several others. Two Maricopas were wounded; the volunteers of B and C Companies looted and burned the rancheria before returning to Fort McDowell on September 19. Several weeks later Company C led by Lieutenant Walker left Fort McDowell again. On October 7, the Pimas routed an Apache band near the mouth of Tonto Creek about fifty miles from McDowell. They killed five and captured eight Apaches. Both Indian companies joined an expedition into Tonto Basin in late November. On the twenty-fourth, they left Fort McDowell and remained in the field for six days. As there was no formal report of the campaign, the force apparently found no apaches.

Colonel Bennett kept the volunteers in the field. In early December Lieutenant Walker's Pima Indians left Fort McDowell heading east for the Mazatzal Mountains. Eighty-two Pimas and forty citizen Pimas, or 'Imelicms," comprised Walker's force. Two days out of camp, the men were caught in a snowstorm, and suffered because they had no blankets or extra clothing. A scouting party soon reported signs of Apaches in the fresh snow. The Indians apparently had been searching for seeds. Believing that an Apache camp was nearby, Walker had his men saddle their horses and prepare for a fight. Leaving the pack mules and supplies with a small guard, they followed a small creek for three miles. Here, the volunteers discovered a recently abandoned rancheria. There were twenty new huts at the camp, and from the footprints in the snow; the party must have numbered about sixty persons. Walker sent part of his men back to where the pack mules had been left for the night, and continued exploring. Across a nearby range, he discovered a large deserted rancheria that soldiers had found on a previous trip. As their horses were lame and the men needed clothing, most of the citizen Pimas and twenty-five of the Arizona Volunteers returned to Fort McDowell.

On the morning of December 6, scouting continued, that night they camped at a spring called "Toke," where Apaches had planted crops the season before. Contrary to custom, the volunteers built fires because of the extreme cold. They saddled their horses before daylight the next morning, leaving a dozen men to guard the camp and supplies. After riding into the mountains for several miles, Walker halted the volunteers when Sergeant Antonio Azul noticed smoke that he suspected to be from an Apache camp in the valley below. They immediately descended the mountain and attacked the camp and captured one young man and one woman. The others had fled through the snow into the dense forest. Footprints indicated that earlier that morning the Apaches had crossed the mountain from the east to this camp. The soldiers also noted a small patch of freshly planted wheat sticking through the snow. On searching the huts, Lieutenant

Hancock found a \$100 legal tender note and an envelope containing a letter. From this incident, Hancock named a nearby stream "Greenback Creek."

When Walker returned to his supply camp that evening he saw a number of captive Apaches. After he had left camp that morning, the guards saw smoke rising at the opposite side of the valley. Corporal Mos Awk and five privates mounted horses and surprised the Apache camp, killing one woman and taking seven captives. All of the Apache men were absent from the rancheria at the time of the attack. Tracks showed that they had followed Walker's Pimas a short distance that morning before the volunteers turned into the mountains. Walker now decided to return to Fort McDowell, most of the horses were lame, their hooves worn down by the volcanic stones in the mountains. Some of the pack mules had been so weakened by the snowstorm that they could scarcely carry their aparajos, or pack saddles. On the night of December 9, the volunteers reached McDowell, full of spirit and eager to celebrate their victory.

During January and February of 1866, Company B again took the field to search for Apache camps. In some cases, the Apaches took the offensive. For example, on January 1, when a detachment of Company C left Fort McDowell for the Pima Villages, Apaches attacked them and killed two volunteers, Hawnik Maw and Juan Lewis. In January-February, Company B had killed thirty-three Apaches and taken eight captives.

General McDowell arrived at the Pima Villages on February 12 to inspect the Maricopa and Pima Indian companies. He was pleased with the condition of their weapons, and praised their attitude towards scouting. Before McDowell left the Pima Villages, he received a message from a group of Papago Indians near Tucson expressing their willingness to join the volunteers and fight Apaches. The Papagos expected to be furnished weapons and rations while they were in service. McDowell approved their voluntary service and suggested they be included in an expedition as soon as possible.

In early March, Lieutenants Ewing and Walker led a combined group of Pima and Maricopa volunteers on a scout. After riding for two days, they observed a smoke cloud on a nearby mountain. At sunset, the party halted. While waiting for the moon to rise, the Indians formed a circle around their prophet, the "tobacco mancer." The prophet arose and began to smoke cigarettes. As soon as he had smoked one cigarette, an attendant handed him another, until at last he began "to tremble and fell—dead—(stupefied)." Everyone remained silent. After lying on the ground for a few minutes, the prophet arose and spoke: "My spirits followed the trail towards the Mazatzal (the trail they were then on) until it comes under (the mountain) peaks and there it saw many warriors." He continued, "it then followed to the north . . . and nearby found a small rancheria . . . which formerly lived nearer here, but one of their number died and from that cause they changed their abode."

After this revelation, the volunteers took a short nap. When the moon had risen high in the sky; Walker and Ewing led their men up the mountain in search of the rancheria. On a little flat halfway to the top, they found a deserted camp. They followed the tracks of two persons and halted where mescal had been cut the day before. Scouts reported another rancheria at the mouth of the canyon just below. Leaving a small guard with the horses, the volunteers began descending the mountain. While climbing down, holding on to bushes and roots here and there, one soldier accidentally discharged his musket. A moment later, the Apaches below began swarming and shouting "What a chal!" "Sop-e-Ka!" "Run—Run, A shot—A shot." Ewing later reported: "Our boys leaped over the stones, scrambled through the brush and got down in time to bring down some of the hindmost as the (Apaches) climbed up the rocks on the opposite side of where their huts were situated. The volunteers chased the Apaches until sunrise, killing twenty and wounding several more. Ewing's men destroyed the huts, baskets, cooking vessels, clothing, and a large pot of mescal. Walker recognized a sack and tobacco pouch that had belonged to a member of this company who had been killed in January. The rancheria was situated about twenty miles from the Polas Blancas on the headwaters of the "Kok-we-Tan," or Rattlesnake's Creek, and about forty miles from Fort McDowell.

In mid-March, the volunteers were again in the field. A large number of citizen Pimas, Maricopas, and Papagos accompanied the expedition. On order from Colonel Bennett, Orders number 10, the blacksmith at Fort McDowell checked the horses of the volunteers and volunteer citizens and applied new shoes as needed. The quartermaster furnished pack mules to carry supplies. Bennett ordered a temporary subsistence depot established on Tonto Creek, and sent 825 pounds of pinole, dried beef, and other rations to the depot. Bennett spared no expense to make the expedition the largest and most successful launched at Fort McDowell up to that time.

On March 27, Ewing and Walker led both companies of Arizona Volunteers east up the Gila River with 260 Papagos and Pimas and forty Maricopas. When the men stopped for rests those without rifles or muskets worked on war clubs. Scouts found a trail that contained fresh cattle and horse tracks, and four days later, they entered the mountains. When an eclipse of the moon occurred, the soldiers stopped. In the darkness they spotted a campfire several miles away. With moonlight illuminating their trail, they left their horses and hastened toward the fire. At the bottom of the canyon, they spotted footprints of people and animals. The officers ordered the men to remove their shoes, and proceed quietly through the rocks, carrying their rifles securely. At the edge of a small stony bluff, they discovered Apaches clapping their hands in an attempt to alert their companions.

The volunteers attacked the camp, killing Indians of both sexes as they ran from their huts. Upon reaching the area, they captured several women and children. The headman of the village was shot when he ran from a hiding place. The volunteers killed a total of twenty-five Apaches, took sixteen prisoners, and captured eight horses, which the Pimas claimed had been taken from their own villages. Three Pima soldiers were wounded and one died later. The Pimas, mourning the death of their fellow soldier, took some of their own clothing and burned the corpse. The volunteers set fire to the huts, baskets, and skins. As they left the camp, they could see hostile Apaches standing on large rocks on the mountain making howling noises and hand motions. Ewing and Walker took their men several miles around the mountain to prevent being injured by rocks, which the Apaches rolled down toward them. The volunteers returned to Fort McDowell in high "war" spirits. Noting the Indian's enthusiasm, Colonel Bennett ordered another campaign to leave directly from the Pima and Maricopa villages. But, the success of scouting expeditions that followed immediately had mixed results. During May they covered 180 miles, but located no Apache camps.

In late July, a Maricopa-Pima group returned to Fort McDowell, reporting they had killed two Apaches in the mountains and three in a rancheria north of Fort McDowell. On the return trip they had killed another and captured three. The horses were in bad condition because of constant rains. Walker's Pimas also scouted the mountains. On their return to Fort McDowell, the Pimas also found a rancheria, but the enemy fled before the volunteers could attack. To the north, at Camp Lincoln, other companies of Arizona Volunteers were active. Company E left Lincoln on the night of February 11, 1866, on their first successful campaign. Four days earlier on February 7, Captain Washburn had written Acting Governor Richard D. McCormick that he did not anticipate any great expectations from his volunteers, but hoped in a few trials to accomplish something by some of them.

Lieutenant Gallegos, Dr. Edward Palmer, the contract Army surgeon, and forty-five men of Company E headed northeast with five days' rations and thirty rounds of ammunition each. The men wore moccasins made from worn out shoes and scraps of rawhide and buckskin. They concealed themselves by day. At the South fork of Beaver Creek, around nine o'clock, scouts reported they had followed two Indians to a camp located in a series of five caves. By two o'clock in the morning, Gallegos had positioned his detachment in front of the caves. At daybreak, Gallegos, shouting in the Apache dialect, called to the Indians to surrender, the defenders opened fire. At mid-morning one Indian yelled back that he would die rather than surrender. The Indians made a stubborn resistance, and many of them must have been shot because the volunteers heard "moans, shrieks, and yells" among the enemy. After the battle, the caves presented a horrible sight. Dead of all ages and sexes lay mixed with household goods and provisions, covered with dirt brought down from the ceilings by the firing. Thirty Indians were killed in the lower caverns and twelve were captured.

Because those higher in the cliffs would not surrender, Gallegos decided not to prolong the fight. His men ransacked the lower caves, taking all provisions, buckskins, and other valuables that could be carried back to camp. One soldier caustically remarked that the Indians were better supplied than the Camp Lincoln commissary. Seven soldiers received wounds in the fight and all received minor stone bruises from rocks, which the Indians threw in defense. Taking two women and ten children as prisoners, the volunteers headed back to Camp Lincoln, arriving on the morning of February 15. In his report to Captain Washburn, Gallegos praised his command for bravery in the "Battle of the Five Caves." The volunteers, he said, had assaulted "the mouths of the caves (through) arrows flying as thick as hail."

Washburn and an escort of eighteen volunteers took the Apache prisoners to Fort Whipple on February 19. There they received hearty congratulations for the excellent performance of his men. The Army quartermaster issued buckskin for new sandals and several pounds of tobacco as a token acknowledgment of their success. Acting Governor McCormick praised the volunteers, saying their recent attack on the Apaches met the "hearty and general commendation" of all Arizonans. He suggested that other expeditions take the field during the spring and summer. The Arizona Volunteers, he added, "may do more than all (others) who have preceded them in the subjugation of the Apaches in this part of the Territory." Washburn asked Captain John Green, Post Adjutant at Fort Whipple, for the services of a guide named Antonio Dias, but Dias was on another assignment. He inquired again about lances for his men to use in close contact with the Apaches, and if none were available or could be made, he wanted Colt revolvers.

Dr. Palmer, who accompanied Lieutenant Gallegos' expedition, published his account of the "Battle of the Five Caves" in the Prescott Weekly Miner. The volunteers had worn homemade sandals, packed their own provisions, and traveled over 100 miles on foot during the campaign. They had surprised the Apaches, whose dogs had not even heard the troops approach, so "stealthily had been their march." Palmer praised the volunteers for their ability to traverse rough country at night. Palmer felt that a few more battles would "forever quiet the hellish Apache." He added that he had offered the men a dollar's worth of tobacco for every Apache they killed in the future, so "that they may smoke the pipe of peace over the peaceable and harmless condition of those who fall under their guns."

In early March, the officers at Camp Lincoln prepared the volunteers for another campaign. They had them make extra moccasins from the buckskin taken at the recent battle and tried to instruct them in some tactical exercises for fighting the Indians. On March 1, Lieutenant Gallegos and sixty men left Camp Lincoln, heading eastward along an Indian trail and carrying five day's rations. The scout was unsuccessful, the men returned five days later without having seen an Indian. Captain Washburn and Gallegos agreed that, if they were to be effective, they needed a guide familiar with the area.

Another campaign was launched on March 20 on foot. Lieutenant Cervantes and Dr. Palmer left camp with twenty-six men of Company A, heading southeast and carrying ten days' rations and forty rounds of ammunition. At ten o'clock that night, after traveling about eighteen miles, Cervantes rested his men for a few hours and then traveled twelve miles farther. The next day, the scout continued. That night, the commander sent out men to look for campfires. At midnight the scouts reported a large number of fires fifty or sixty miles away. But, Cervantes felt the distance was too great, and changed his course. The volunteers moved on, with Cervantes each night sending out scouts to look for campfires. When the scouts reported that a camp was not far away, Cervantes ordered his command forward, but stopped two hours later at the edge of a steep canyon situated at the headwaters of the Salt River. The location was about seventy miles southeast of Camp Lincoln. Shortly before daylight, Cervantes sent eighteen men toward the camp. Within twenty yards of the Indians, the soldiers began firing. In the ensuing fight, the volunteers killed twenty-two Apaches, wounded seven of the eight that escaped, captured two children, and destroyed the camp. Two soldiers received arrow wounds. The party returned to Camp Lincoln on March 25.

The volunteers had "behaved admirably," the Prescott Miner reported. They had been constantly "eager for the march, and returned in fine spirits." This second victory within a month had earned the Camp Lincoln forces a "proud name, and . . . praises (were) everywhere shouted." The soldiers understood how to fight the Apaches and were willing to undertake long and tiresome night marches into the mountains to search for Apache camps. The volunteers, with less expense, less parade, and less delay, were effectively ridding the country of its greatest barrier to prosperity. In comparison with regular troops, the newspaper said, "the spirit and courage of the regulars could not be questioned, but they were not familiar with the country, had little knowledge of the Apaches, and would not subsist on coarse food - - all of which were requisite to successful campaigning in central Arizona."

Campaigning into the mountains continued. On March 21, Lieutenant Gallegos, Dr. Palmer, and fifty-six men of Company E scouted the country north of Camp Lincoln for six days. But the volunteers made no contact with the enemy. They had located a small Apache camp, but the Indians discovered them and hid in the brush and rocks. The soldiers also discovered several more Indians carrying packs, but since it was nearly dark, the volunteers did not attempt to follow.

In mid-April, despite short rations Captain Washburn led twenty-five men of Company E into the mountains west of Camp Lincoln to improve the wagon route to Fort Whipple. Enroute the volunteers attacked a party of thirty Apaches, killing six, wounding several more, and capturing one. Two soldiers received severe sprained ankles in the fighting. At the time, a party of twenty-seven Indians, armed with bows and arrows, ambushed Sergeant Miguel Elias and six privates on escort duty between Camp Lincoln and Fort Whipple near Ash Creek. In the fighting, two Indian men were killed and one wounded, but the other Indians drove off the pack mule carrying all the soldiers' blankets.

In late May, the supply situation at Camp Lincoln improved. The previous month, the lack of provisions had permitted only short expeditions, and Washburn had sent thirty soldiers at a time to transport supplies in small lots from Fort Whipple. With improved rations, Gallegos on May 23, with sixty members of Company A and E marched from Camp Lincoln on an eight-day scout to the north. Four day later, the volunteers reached the Little Colorado and San Francisco rivers. Here they found a large number of vacant camps in a deep canyon with Gallegos named Calevera. By the end of the month, the volunteers were back at Lincoln.

In early June, a large group of Apaches, estimated at ninety persons, ambushed Sergeant Elias and nine men of Company E at Grief Hill just west of Camp Lincoln. The soldiers were returning from Fort Whipple, leading ten pack mules carrying corn and supplies and driving five head of beef cattle. The Indians wounded Sergeant Elias and one private, drove off the cattle, and killed two of the pack mules. Lieutenant Gallegos and thirty volunteers hurried to assist Sergeant Elias but arrived too late to help. Gallegos again took the field, with fifty-two men of Companies A and E, he headed northwest in an effort to find the Apaches who had taken the cattle. On June 16, the volunteers found two recently abandoned rancherias and a cattle trail leading towards Black Canyon. Three days later, they found an old deserted fortification. Here Gallegos decided to return to camp because several of his men were sick.

In early July, Lieutenant Gallegos and fifty men of Company E scouted southeast towards White River in the Tonto Basin. His scouts reported eighteen "smokes from Indian fires" some twenty miles away. Moving after dark, they headed toward the fires, and the next day located and destroyed a small patch of corn. Reports soon reached Gallegos that his advance group had found a rancharia and that the Indians were agitated and moving about. Gallegos hurried half of his detachment into the mountains. The volunteers captured an old man who told them that only five men, one woman, and a child had been at the camp, and that they had been there only two days. When Gallegos took the old man to Camp Lincoln, the volunteers named him, "Paymaster." As most of the men had received no pay up to that time, the wrinkled old man, nearly blind, without a tooth, and almost naked, seemed to be as good a paymaster as they might see. During the day, the old Indian moved freely about the camp, but the soldiers locked him up at night. One morning, he was missing from camp, and a search began. The volunteers

discovered him in a ravine where he had fallen. As he had injured himself so badly that he could not be moved, one of the volunteers shot him where he lay to end his suffering.

On July 17, Captain Washburn led ten soldiers mounted on mules up the Verde River on a two-day expedition. At a distance of thirty miles, they came upon a new rancheria of twenty-six lodges, but Indians discovered the soldiers before they could attack the camp. The Apaches ran into the hills, and began screaming and making "grotesque jestures (sic)." Washburn's men looted the camp, and started back to Camp Lincoln, enroute they found two of the five cattle taken in early June. This was the first fresh meat the volunteers had in several months. In addition to campaigning, the volunteers at Camp Lincoln spent much of July and August escorting supply parties from Fort Whipple to Camp Lincoln, and guarding a field of ripe corn at the Clear Fork settlement south of the camp.

While the troops at Camp Lincoln on the Verde were scouting almost weekly for the hostile Apaches, the volunteers of Lieutenant Hutton's Company F at Skull Valley southwest of Prescott were performing more prosaic but equally hazardous duty. As early as January 1866, Hutton drew on his company for escort duty. He detailed five men to accompany a wagon enroute to Prescott from La Paz. Eight miles from the Skull valley camp, a band of fifty Indians attacked the wagon, killing two of the guards and wounding a third man in a three-hour fight. The wagon contained a large cargo of ammunition from the Fort Yuma Depot for Fort Whipple. Hutton regularly sent men to escort freight wagons along the road from Prescott to La Paz, and to protect ranches at Skull Valley throughout the spring.

In late May, fifteen of Lieutenant Hutton's company undertook their first campaign. This group, on foot, started into the mountains to search for Indian camps. The foray was unsuccessful and the party returned to camp on June 1. At the end of June, thirteen members of Company F again scouted in the mountains, but found no Indians. On July 13, Hutton marched on foot with eighteen Arizona Volunteers and eighteen California Volunteers from Fort Whipple north of Prescott. After winding through the mountains for nearly two weeks, Hutton discovered fresh Indian signs, but a steep canyon wall prevented the men and the pack animals from getting down. They camped there for the night, the next morning they descended the mountain range at an angle of forty-five degrees for nearly a mile. At the bottom, the party surprised an Indian camp. They killed an Indian, wounded two others, captured two children, and burned the camp. The following day, Lieutenant Hutton's party reached the Verde River. They passed an abandoned rancheria that had accommodated about fifteen Indians, and saw smoke signals on the west side of the Verde some five miles away and several caves, forts, earthworks, and fresh Indian signs. Hutton's volunteers reached Camp Lincoln on July 27, here they rested for two days, then returned to Skull Valley. Hutton's expedition had traversed three hundred miles of lava stone country. It had rained nearly every day. He praised the men for enduring every hardship with the "greatest degree of cheerfulness." He reported that his men had been issued double-soled nailed shoes, but they had worn out after ten or fifteen days, so the men had to make moccasins from the skin of a bear they had killed.

On August 11, word came from the leader of a wagon train about eight miles from Lieutenant Hutton's camp that a large band of Indians had stopped it. As they hurried to assist, the soldiers saw seven teamsters and four guards talking with five Indians. Four of the Indians professed to be seeking peace and returned to their group. The fifth Indian was taken to Hutton's camp for questioning. An interpreter recognized the captive as the notorious La Paz Charley, although the Indian tried to conceal his identity by talking through his teeth. Charley said that the band wanted mules from the wagon train. He warned that they were determined to "clean out" the valley, claiming to own in addition to the wood, water, and grass, all of the corn recently planted there by the settlers. He said the band included Apache Mojaves, Mojaves, Hualapais, and Apache Tontos.

Irataba, Chief of the Mojaves, was aware of their intentions and had warned them not to leave the reservation. La Paz Charley said that the Apache Tontos had encouraged the other Indians to leave the reservation, capture the wagon train, and kill the Arizona Volunteers at Skull Valley. The next day, the hills around Skull Valley swarmed with Indians. Some ventured into camp,

claiming to be friendly Apache Mojaves. Lieutenant Hutton talked with one of them at a distance of two hundred yards. The conversation was about the same as the day before. The Indian told Hutton that George Leahy, Indian agent at La Paz, wanted fifty buckskins and had told the Indians to get them wherever possible. Hutton detected that the Indian was lying, and he sent a messenger to Fort Whipple to report the matter. The band had strayed forty miles beyond the line laid down by the District Commander of Arizona. Hutton was advised to punish the Indians, "but to use discretion and not force the matter."

On August 13, the wagon train left camp, heading for Prescott with an escort of four soldiers. A mile and a half away, Indians approached the wagons attempting to show their identification papers. Lieutenant Hutton brought up the rest of his men, and instructed the Indians to leave their bows and arrows behind. Nearly eighty Indians left their bows and arrows and approached the wagons again. As they approached, some drew knives from their clothing and brandished them in the air. Hutton sent a sentinel to a hill nearby to study the situation. Shortly, he reported that five Indians with guns were in the rocks above and that the hills were full of Indians exchanging arm signals. About this time, an old squaw cried out in Spanish, "Pitch into them!" – "You can whip them with your knives!" She shouted the command several times with increase emphasis. Hutton warned his men to keep the Indians at a distance. But the Indians came closer. One Indian, who claimed to be a chief, jabbed his knife at a teamster, trying to conceal his movement with buckskin on his left arm. When another Indian thrust the knife at a volunteer and struck his hand, the soldier killed him. Close fighting then broke out and raged for forty-five minutes. The volunteers killed twenty-three Indians and wounded around fifty others. Hutton believed that Hitachepitche, a chief of the Hualapais, was among the Indians killed. One volunteer was killed, and one received severe cuts on the hand, but the teamsters were uninjured.

From January through August of 1866, the Arizona Volunteers had performed arduous duty in central Arizona. Military and governmental leaders expressed great satisfaction at their determination and success in hunting down Apaches. Maricopas, Pimas, and Mexicans all eagerly took the field and pushed forward readily, and relished the opportunity to kill their hereditary enemies. Their methods were not overlooked, as they served as important examples for the regular army to follow in later efforts to subjugate the hostile Apache. Settlers, miners, and travelers all praised the volunteers for helping create zones of relative safety in a hostile land.

### **Camp Life**

Throughout their enlistment, the Arizona Volunteers lived in primitive conditions in camp. Few permanent buildings were constructed at the posts where they served. Consequently, life in garrison was hard. The men generally lived in brush shelters and had limited rations. Hostile Indians constantly lurked in the vicinity, and two volunteers were brutally killed on the Verde while fishing near the post. Despite these hardships, however, the morale of the men remained high during their period of service.

In early March of 1866, General John S. Mason took notice of the needs of the Arizona Volunteers. Paragraph seven of General Mason's plan stipulated that no permanent building would be constructed at any post for the volunteers, except those absolutely necessary to house supplies and for treatment of the sick and injured. No quarters "other than shades or shelters" were to be erected for the enlisted men. Furthermore, only a small guard would be detailed for each post. In this way, the balance of the soldiers could be kept "constantly on the move after Indians—returning to their posts only to refit and for supplies." From the start, the Arizona Volunteers built their own quarters. In several instances—at Fort McDowell, Camp Lincoln, and Skull Valley—they actually constructed an entire post.

The plan to construct temporary shelters provoked sharp criticism. Thus, the volunteers at Camp Lincoln, one soldier wrote, from the start had "no tents, deficient clothin (sic), and half rations." The shelters the men put up consisted of willow branches and poles covered with earth. At Camp Lincoln, Dr. Palmer hired several soldiers to build a hut to serve as a dispensary.

Materials for this facility included reed for sides, roof, and doors. The inside was lined with blankets to keep out the wind, but it was a "dark, dirty miserable hovel." he later said.

The problem of supplying the posts in Arizona was critical in 1866. When the War Department transferred Arizona from the Department of New Mexico to the Department of California, supplies for the new district came from California via Fort Yuma and Fort Mohave on the Colorado River. Low river levels during the winter of 1865 caused long delays in up-stream transportation. Once steamers reached Fort Mohave, delivering food and equipment overland by wagon to the scattered outposts required a great amount of time. The Arizona Volunteers often were unable to take to the field because of severe shortages of rations. In April when Camp Lincoln and Skull Valley were completely without flour, coffee, and sugar, the commissaries issued to each man three-quarters of a pound of rice instead of flour. Rations issued to the volunteers on campaigns usually included dried beef and coffee, when they were available, and pinole, a food made of roasted, ground, and sweetened corn or wheat. Pinole consisted of about one part of sugar to two parts of corn or wheat and was mixed with water. This mixture was supposedly "very refreshing."

Clothing and shoes were equally deficient. The volunteers felt that they received few clothes because they were considered as "scum" at the posts where they had enlisted or briefly served. As a result, they had to endure the cold weather without proper clothing, bedding, or shoes. Some of the volunteers without shoes tied their feet up in rags. At Camp Lincoln, most of the men without shoes managed to obtain enough untanned rawhide to make their own moccasins, which they called "teguas." The soles were turned up at the sides so that the sides would not wear out quickly, and also would render broader soles. A hole was left in the sole so a man could shake out gravel and sand easily.

Although the soldiers suffered from inadequate shelters and improper food and clothing, they were well equipped for warfare against the Apaches. According to a report of the Office of the Chief of Ordnance, Company A was armed with the .58 caliber, Springfield rifled muskets. The other companies, except Company B, which was not in the report, received .54 caliber, U.S. Model 1840 rifles. The June 1866 report for the regiment showed only one rifle as unserviceable. One company had bayonets. All companies received cap pouches, cone picks, gun slings, waist belts and plates, and screwdrivers and cone wrenches. Three companies had a limited number of ball screws, spring vices, tompons, and arms chests. The inventory of cartridges for the regiment at that time included 770 rounds of .58 caliber cartridges and 9,879 rounds of .54 caliber cartridges.

Camp life, of course, had diversions. At Camp Lincoln the records indicate that there were sixteen wives and female companions living with the men. The women were sourly denounced by Dr. Palmer as coming from that "mixed race of Spanish and Indians that the Catholic Church has made into a peculiar kind of Christians." Whenever the volunteers returned from an expedition, the women formed into a procession and marched out of camp to meet them. Palmer said the women were "mostly prostitutes living promiscuously among the soldiers; and as soon as one's means of support gave out, they took another mate."

The volunteers frequently experienced a scarcity of smoking tobacco. As a substitute they used willow bark, "old checoa" (unidentifiable), tealeaves, and fresh coffee grounds, which had a strong narcotic effect. The men also cooked, dried, and smoked the leaves of the mescal plant. This concoction was very pleasant and sweet, but it would gum up a pipe.

Even at camp, the volunteers often found life precarious. To supplement their diet, they occasionally walked down to the Verde River to fish. In late February of 1866, two men went fishing. One man returned early, but the other, Roque Ramirez, stayed for a while. The next morning a search party found his body in the river, stiff and cold with three arrow wounds. There was a humorous sequel to this tragedy. The widow, Maria Antonio Rassetto, was soon beset with "would-be husbands." She asked Captain Washburn to help her select another man; Washburn suggested Private Loreto Hernandez of his company. He instructed Dr. Palmer, who was going to Fort Whipple for supplies, to arrange their marriage.

On May 1, at Prescott, the justice of the peace "tied the conjugal knot" for the couple, conducting the ceremony through the aid of an interpreter. Dignitaries at Prescott attended the wedding. Governor McCormick prepared the marriage certificate. Dr. Palmer paid his share of the celebration, contributing \$28 "to make the couple happy." Officers at Fort Whipple contributed wine so liberally that the occasion became one of "great Jollity." Reflecting Later, Palmer noted that the civil ceremony provided just as legal and binding a marriage as that performed by the Catholic Church. The Prescott Weekly Miner patronizingly wished the couple "untold tortillas and frioles and a long line of fandango loving heirs." Palmer and the newly married couple left at the end of the week for Camp Lincoln with two wagons of supplies.

Several of the volunteer companies experienced much illness. Men recruited in southern Arizona came down with bad colds brought on by wet weather and exposure from sleeping on the ground; others were prostrated by malarial conditions along the Verde River and by improper diet. Every soldier from southern Arizona, except Captain Washburn, suffered from various forms of fever. In August, a few days before the first troops at Camp Lincoln were discharged from service, as many as sixty at a time reported to Dr. Palmer for medical attention. Palmer said that the fever "so prevalent in Arizona had assumed a tropical nature." Various forms of typhoid and bilious disorders resulted from continued attacks of fever caused by the rains and excessive humidity. Palmer said the Verde Valley was hemmed in on each side by mountains, which prevented a free sweep of winds. In sharp contrast, not a single individual from the Indian companies was reported sick on the Post Returns.

The Arizona Volunteers also encountered other difficulties. As they spoke no common language, translators were always required. Two of the officers were Mexicans; but only one spoke both English and Spanish. Reports written by one officer had to be translated from Spanish to English before they were sent to District Headquarters. One officer spoke the Pima Language. Other officers spoke combinations of English and Maricopa, English and Pima, or English and Spanish. One of the Mexican officers spoke the Apache dialect, and no doubt, some of the Pimas and the Maricopas spoke an Apache dialect as well.

In early August, Governor McCormick, his wife, and Adjutant General Garvin visited Camp Lincoln. A detachment of ten volunteers met the governor's party at the King Woolsey's Agua Fria Ranch as an escort to the Verde Valley. While at Camp Lincoln, Captain Washburn, Lieutenant Gallegos and his wife, and several soldiers accompanied McCormick on a leisurely visit to some Indian ruins, presently known as Montezuma's Castle, set on a high bluff. McCormick considered them to have one been "substantial homes," and among the most "perfect and remarkable in the Territory." He said that every visitor to the Verde should see them.

Earlier in the year, several attempts had been made to retain the Arizona Volunteers in Federal service. In early May, Colonel Bennett at Fort McDowell had petitioned the Adjutant General for the District of Arizona to either extend the volunteer unit or to replace it with a full native regiment for an all out war against the Apaches. The service and experience of the volunteers would enable them to perform even better in the future. Bennett suggested that Pimas, Maricopas, Papagos, and Mexicans were familiar with the country, frontier life, and hardships, and would be of great assistance in bringing the hostile Apaches to terms. Careful selection of officers would ensure "sobriety, good judgement, energy and integrity." If the Federal government did not retain the volunteers in service, Colonel Bennett urged that they be allowed to retain their arms and accoutrements after discharge. In this way, the men could continue fighting the Apaches whenever an opportunity presented itself.

On June 1, Governor McCormick had written to Secretary of War Stanton urging him to retain the Arizona Volunteers. McCormick estimated the number of hostile Indians in the territory to be fewer than 1,000 of a total population of 5,000. The hostiles roamed approximately 25,000 square miles of mountain and desert country, an area nearly the size of the states of Massachusetts, Vermont, and New Hampshire. Their domain lay primarily in eastern and central Arizona. Apache raids had focused on the roads connecting Tucson, Pima Villages, Wickenburg,

and Prescott, and the mining and farming camps scattered along the Hassayampa, Agua Fria, Verde, Salinas, and Gila rivers, and along the Arizona-Sonora border.

McCormick believed the only way to obtain a permanent peace with the Apaches was to fight and conquer them, not through defensive operations, but through hunting them in the mountains. To offer the Apaches a reservation and expect them to stay on it, or make a treaty with them, would be to exhibit gross ignorance of the Indians' disposition. He thought the Apaches must be driven from their "retreats, however difficult to reach, until they sued for peace." McCormick felt that every effort must be made to prevent the Apaches from planting crops, harvesting the mesal ranges, and from "jerking" wild game or stolen beef.

In early July of 1866, however, the War Department had officially rejected the possibility of extending the enlistment of the First Arizona Volunteer Infantry Regiment. There was no law under which the native soldiers could be retained for Federal service, and if a decision were made to organize another regiment of native Arizonans, special legislation would be necessary for subsisting, equipping, and paying the soldiers.

With no way of retaining the Arizona Volunteers in service in the Arizona Territory, the commanders set about preparing to muster their men out of service. Conditions of camp life and hardships in the field had not been too severe for the hearty Maricopas, Pimas, and Mexicans, for they had realized from the start that "hunting Apaches" would not be an easy undertaking.

## Discharge

When official news reached the Arizona Territory that the War Department had rejected extending the Arizona Volunteers in the Federal service, the military leaders began preparation for discharging a regiment that contained 333 enlisted men and ten officers. There were discharge papers to be completed, men to be paid for their term of service, some had received no pay for nearly a full year, and final assessments and reports to be made of the impact of the Arizona volunteers on the Apaches in Arizona.

The first companies discharged were at Camp Lincoln. Captain Washburn went to Fort Whipple on August 4 to secure discharge forms, final statements, and muster rolls for Companies A and E, whose enlistment would end before the close of the month. Back at Camp Lincoln he ordered those men in Company E whose enlistment would end by August 11 to march immediately to Fort Whipple. Sixty-five men were mustered out between August 12 and November 7. First Lieutenant John M. Ver Mehr, who had served as an aide to General Mason, had been discharged on June 27. Captain Hiram S. Washburn and Second Lieutenant Manuel Gallegos were released on November 7. Company records indicated that Private Roque Ramirez had been killed by Indians, three men died of illness: Vicente Bracamontes, Felipe Cordova, and Santaigo Guitierrez. Six men deserted Company E shortly before they received orders to march from Fort Mason to Fort Whipple: Antonio Cota, Encarnacion Dias, Abelardo Flores, Jose Ma. Mondragon, Plutarco Morales, and Juan Vega.

Twenty-eight volunteers of Company A terminated their service between August 23 and October 15. Second Lieutenant Primitivo Cervantes had resigned on June 7, 1866. First Lieutenant William H. Ford who served also as post quartermaster at Camp Lincoln, had replaced him. Ford received his discharge on October 7, 1866. There was no record of deserters and illness for the company. One soldier, Private John Broderick had been killed on April 20.

By mid-September Captain Washburn's command at Camp Lincoln was reduced to fewer than a dozen men. He reported to Adjutant General Garvin that Indians were beginning to steal corn from the farms along the Verde River at the rate of thirty to forty bushels a night. There was but one soldier at the camp who was able to shoulder a musket, and he was left to guard what remained of the commissary stores. Washburn felt the Indians might attack his camp and take the remaining livestock. He wrote: "if assistance does not come very soon, I shall have to abandon what government property I am trying to protect, and seek security for animals and

myself.” Settlers at the Clear Creek settlement helped him transfer the government supplies from Camp Lincoln to the settlement six miles south of Camp Lincoln.

One night near the end of September, Lieutenant Gallegos, an enlisted man, and two citizens named Lang and Ceiderman went to the cornfields to watch for Indians. When the men arrived, they heard the Indians already there gathering corn. Ceiderman discharged his shotgun, which was loaded with wire cartridges and buckshot. The blast killed an Indian woman carrying about a bushel of corn from the field. The next day, the men dragged the woman’s body along the trail to the field and hung it up in a field to frighten other Indians away. The fields were quiet. On September 29, Captain George M. Downey, commanding Company C, First Battalion, Fourteenth Infantry, relieved Captain Washburn at Camp Lincoln.

The first complete company of Arizona Volunteers was discharged from service on September 11, 1866, at Fort McDowell. This was Company B of Maricopa Indians commanded by First Lieutenant Thomas Ewing and Captain Juan Chevereah. Second Lieutenant Charles Riedt was mustered out two days later. The men were allowed to retain their firearms and accoutrements. Value of the weapons was six dollars each, or a total of \$522. Muster rolls showed four members of the company had died in battles with the Apaches: McGill, Yose, Goshe Zep, and Duke. There was no record of illnesses. Six men had deserted Company B: Beba Apmaya, Denyan Mabker, Conina, Homor Goder, Mru Sio, and Morkenb.

Company C of Pima Indians was mustered out on September 13 also at Fort McDowell. Captain John D. Walker, First Lieutenant William A. Hancock, and Second Lieutenant Antonio Azul were also discharged the same day. Eighty-four men retained firearms valued at 513.23. Three Pimas had been killed in battles with the Apaches: Hownik Mawkum, Juan Lewis, and Au Papat. There was no record of illness. Susan Poche and Lewis deserted Company C on December 1, 1865.

Company F at Skull Valley was discharged from service in October and five on dates after October 31. Second Lieutenant Oscar F. Hutton was probably discharged from service on November 7 with Captain Washburn, but that cannot be substantiated from the muster rolls. The value of firearms retained by them was \$126.65. Three soldiers had been killed in engagements with hostile Apaches: Jose Anselmo, Bernardino Escalante, and Paulino Espinosa; and six men had deserted: Jose Ma. Romero, Concepcion Morales, Jose Natamee, Canuto Perez, Jose Romero, and Juan Jose Balenzuela.

The question of pay for the Arizona Volunteers rankled for quite a while. At Fort McDowell, the volunteer companies had been paid only once during their service. Colonel Bennett, wrote his superior about the problem. On November 24, Paymaster General Benjamin W. Brice in Washington, D.C. ordered Paymaster Leonard to stop payments after October 31. Money was short for paying troops being mustered out of service. As his two paymasters would be detained in Arizona until after the December 31 muster, Paymaster Leonard let the matter ride. In early August of 1866, Paymaster General Brice stated that he anticipated no future delays in the payment of troops on the Pacific Coast. The California Volunteers had been mustered out, and there were a sufficient number of paymasters and funds to meet all demands.

The Arizona Volunteers had been a unique group. Officers of those companies comprised mostly of Mexican soldiers reported discipline as good; one commander described his command as “obedient.” The Pima and Maricopa commanders described discipline among their commands as “good for Indians,” and all commanders praised their men for their military response. Despite trying circumstances of service, the number of deserters and casualties had been low. From the five companies of nearly 350 men, only twenty had deserted. Company A, composed of Mexicans from central Arizona reported no deserters. The casualty record for the one-year of service was remarkably low. Only ten volunteers had been killed in battles with the Apaches, Five men died of illness and the number seriously wounded was thirteen.

Their effectiveness in the field was demonstrated by their accomplishments. Reports of the number of Apaches killed varied because of the possibility of double counting among the Pima and Maricopa companies. However, with this possibility in mind, some 150 to 173 Apaches were

killed, thirty-eight were seriously wounded, and fifty-eight were captured. The Pima and Maricopa volunteers captured eight horses, and the Mexican volunteers at Camp Lincoln lost three pack mules and five heads of cattle, four of which were later found.

The volunteers received lavish praise from the editor of the Prescott Weekly Miner. These men "of whom many expected no efficient service," had killed a large number of Apaches and had wounded and captured even more, he said. The volunteers showed that they could make short and inexpensive work of subjugating the Apache. It was regrettable that the volunteer soldiers had to remain in camp for want of rations because they had shown their capacity for campaigning. Many observers admitted that the Apaches could not be subdued by soldiers who had to spend time building posts or scouting in the mountains encumbered with pack trains. The quick night march on foot, with few provisions and a single blanket, was the "telling maneuver and the only one which will insure success." The editor suggested that the method of warfare used by the Arizona Volunteers be adopted by the regular Army.

The Arizona Volunteer Infantry also received praise from territorial leaders. Governor McCormick thought that the volunteers were the best-suited soldiers for Apache Warfare. Most of the regulars had no knowledge of the country, little interest in it, and felt exiled in Arizona. He was not convinced that the Companies of Pimas and Maricopas were reliable. While they were bitterly opposed to the Apaches and killed a great number, they were too superstitious to be good soldiers. The Indians believed in witchcraft, and many were unwilling to undertake campaigns until their wizards had indicated that the signs were right for them. Upon killing even a single Indian, the Pima and Maricopa soldiers insisted upon returning to their villages to celebrate. There, they sauntered about in indolence, "pompously arrayed in their uniforms, including overcoats, even when the mercury marks over tropical temperature."

McCormick praised the Mexican soldiers. They were determined to avenge the loss of friends and property to the Apaches. The Mexicans preferred active duty to camp life, could make long night marches into the mountains, and relished making surprise daylight attacks upon the Apaches. The Mexicans could subsist on jerked beef and pinole, which was the most inexpensive and easily obtained food. They also were willing to harass the Apaches and, if necessary to exterminate them.

Captain Washburn stated that he had never before spent such unremitting toil as his sixteen and one-half months of service in Arizona. If the needed supplies had been furnished, the record of his command would have been greater. Washburn thought that the volunteers by far were superior to any others for field service in Arizona. He thought that 300 volunteers, well officered, at an annual expense of less than \$800 per man could within two years rid the territory of the greatest obstacle to its progress. The volunteers he commanded had fearlessly carried warfare into the heart of Indian country around present-day Globe, the Graham Valley, and as far as the Natural Bridge in the northern part of Gila County.

In the fall of 1866, the third Arizona Territorial Legislature passed a memorial praising the volunteers for their outstanding service in hunting and destroying "the wily and implacable Apache" during their year of service. The soldiers had often pursued the Apache "barefoot and upon half rations" and had inflicted "greater punishment upon the Apaches than all other troops in the territory." Although the financial conditions of the territorial government prohibited offering the men a bonus, the legislators congratulated the soldiers for a job well done. The regiment had set a precedent for future United States military subjugation of the Apaches, and proved the value of Indians as scouts for frontier duty.

Raised to supplement the California Volunteers, whose term of service was ending, the first Arizona Volunteer Infantry Regiment compiled an enviable record during its one year of service. Campaigning from established bases with a minimum of supplies, transportation, and rations, they struck fear into the stronghold of Apache communities in central Arizona. Commanded by both Anglo and native officers, these men performed as shock troop, or militia, in one of the roughest terrain in the Southwest. On foot and by horseback, they traveled cross-country at night to scout for and attack Apaches wherever they could be found. For a young territory

without funds, which was attempting to attract settlers, provide safety for its highways, and encourage a fledgling mining industry, the Arizona Volunteers brought stability and safety to a mineral-rich region. Their story deserves to be remembered in the history of the Southwest.

During the following years there were many skirmishes between U.S. troopers and Apache warriors. However the U.S. Army returned to the West after the end of the Civil War to campaign against the Indians. As the Apaches had a difficult time holding out against troops, in the spring of 1871 about 500 came in to Camp Grant to ask for peace. Their most important leader was Eskiminzin. As it just so happened, there was a young commander at the fort who was sympathetic to the Apaches' difficult position. His name was Lieutenant Royal E. Whitman and Eskiminzin began to consider him his friend.

On December 19, 1872, Fort Grant was established at the foot of Mount Graham by direction of General Crook. In January of 1873, eleven companies of cavalry and infantry were transferred to Fort Grant, under the command of Major Brown. They immediately started work on the construction of a Commissary building, Officer's quarters and a wagon road up the side of Mount Graham. Troops patrolled southeast Arizona and western New Mexico chasing small marauding bands of Apache Indians and keeping the peace. Troops from Fort Grant participated in the military campaign against Geronimo. In 1888, the Buffalo Soldiers of the 10th Cavalry were used in civil duties and chasing train robbers. Starting in 1900, Fort Grant was a collection point for troops going to the Philippines during the Spanish American War. On October 4, 1905, Captain Jenkins marched Troop D across the parade grounds for the final time. The troops were transferred to Fort Huachuca and Fort Grant was left to a caretaker. In 1912, as part of conferring statehood on the Arizona Territory, the federal government turned over Fort Grant to the New State to be used as the State Industrial School for Wayward Boys and Girls. In 1968, the Arizona State Legislature passed a bill making the Fort Grant State Industrial School a part of the State Department of Corrections. In 1973, Fort Grant became an adult male prison. In December of 1997, the Arizona State Prison at Fort Grant became the Fort Grant Unit of the Arizona State Prison Complex

On 30 April 1871 a horrible event occurred that was forever to strain relations between the Apaches and the white man. On that date, a group of men out of Tucson, many of whom were Papagos and Mexicans, but their leaders were Americans, treacherously attacked the peaceful, sleeping Apache camp near Camp Grant. About 144 were killed, almost all of them women and children. The event became a cause for national debate. Many citizens in the East were horrified, and even President Ulysses S. Grant denounced it. However, in Arizona few people were sympathetic, a trial was held later that year and all perpetrators were acquitted. One of the principal leaders, Sidney De Long, was later even elected mayor of Tucson. Lieutenant Whitman himself was heartsick. He buried the bodies and did what he could to console the Apaches, most of them returned to Camp Grant a few days later. For Whitman's compassion he was court martialed several times and finally forced out of the army. General George Stoneman was relieved of his command, and a new officer, General George Crook, took his place

In May 1872, however, President Grant decided to try another peace tactic with the Apaches. He sent General Oliver Otis Howard to Arizona to confer with Crook. Eventually, a conference was set up with the Apaches at Camp Grant on May 21 and 22, 1872. Most of the important leaders in Arizona were there--Indian, Mexican, and American. But, the success of the conference really depended entirely upon Eskiminzin, who was again willing to talk. On the first day of the conference he presented his concerns. He wanted the conference to ensure: (1) that his people be given a reservation, (2) that peace be maintained with the white man, (3) that Whitman be assigned as agent for the Apaches, and (4) that the Apache children who had been taken captive by the Tucsonians at the massacre be returned to their families. Howard agreed to the first three conditions, but said he was only able to find six of the 28 captive children. He didn't know if they could be returned, as those who now had them wanted to keep them. Eskiminzin broke off talks until the next day. On the next day Howard finally agreed to return the six children, but he insisted that they remain awhile under the care of a willing white woman at Camp Grant. Eskiminzin finally relented, as he was assured the families could visit their children. Placing a stone near the site of the conference, Eskiminzin then stated, "As long as that stone lasts, no

more campaigns shall be made by my people. We have placed it there in the presence of General Howard and before all these people, as a symbol that a New World has opened for us all."

The famous conference with Eskiminzin was not the only conference that General Howard had with Apaches during his peace mission. He also established peace with the White Mountain Apaches at Camp Apache, and with the Chiricahuas, under Cochise, at Fort Bowie. Both of these groups were also given reservations. Camp Apache was established as Camp Ord in the spring of 1870, named in honor of General O. C. Ord, Commander of Arizona. This post changed its name to Camp Mogollon August 1, 1870, then Camp Thomas on September 12, 1870 in honor of General George W. Thomas, the "Rock of Chickamauga" of Civil War fame. The post was finally designated Camp Apache on February 2, 1871 as a token of friendship with the nearby tribe. Renamed Fort Apache April 5, 1879 and gained great significance after many tribes were gathered in the nearby San Carlos Reservation and is designated as a National Historic Site today.

Nevertheless, the Tonto Apaches and their allies the Yavapai were still hostile. Consequently, General Crook finally implemented his military campaign in November 1872. From that month until 6 April 1873 a vicious, arduous struggle took place in Arizona, primarily in and around Tonto Basin where Roosevelt Lake is now located. It was all-out war, and it soon became clear that General Crook could not be defeated.

By the spring of 1873 most Apaches and Yavapai terminated their resistance and began settling down on their reservations. However, although most Apaches and Yavapai were peaceful, occasional disturbances still occurred. These had complex causes: bad rations, military and civil disagreements over administration, etc. A severe crisis finally developed in the winter of 1873-1874. Four renegades were still causing troubles on the reservation: Delshay, Chuntz, Cochinay, and Chan-deisi. Crook finally decided to go after them. In the spring of 1874 he began his campaign, and by July 1874 the renegades had all given up or were killed. The heads of seven outlaws were cut off and displayed on the parade ground at San Carlos. It was at this time that a young man arrived at San Carlos to become agent, John Clum. In March 1875 General Crook was then transferred to the Dakota Territory to deal with the Sioux, Arapaho, and Cheyenne. In February 1875 the Fort Verde Reservation was terminated. All 1500 Tonto and Yavapai there were marched in the dead of winter over the Mogollon Rim to the site of what was later to be called Globe.

Agent Clum met them there and helped them in their journey to San Carlos. One old man had carried his invalid wife in a basket on his back the entire distance. At least 25 children had been born on the trail. At the turn of the century many of the Yavapai who were at San Carlos migrated back to their ancestral lands, where they are still located today: Camp Verde Reservation, Ft. McDowell Reservation, and the Yavapai Reservation near Prescott. Then, in the summer of 1875 eight hundred Apaches were forced from Fort Apache to the San Carlos Reservation to what is now Bylas. Over the next few years 800 more were transferred there. However, 600 refused to move, and the government finally let them stay at Fort Apache. Eventually, most of these Apaches returned to Fort Apache to become the current White Mountain Apaches, but some remained at Bylas, they live there to this day.

In May 1876 Clum then was ordered to transfer the wild Chiricahuas to San Carlos. Their reservation was also terminated however; he was able to transfer only 325. They settled at what is now Geronimo near Fort Thomas. However, 140 Chiricahuas fled to their friends the Mimbrenño Apaches on their reservation at Warm Springs, New Mexico. Another 400 escaped from all control whatsoever. Among these 400 was the famous Bedonkohe medicine man Geronimo, born near what is now Clifton, Arizona. But even the peaceful Chiricahuas and Mimbrenños were not to be left alone. In the spring of 1877 the Warm Springs Reservation was also terminated, and the people were removed to San Carlos. The famous Mimbrenño leader Victorio was outraged, as were his friends the Chiricahua. Geronimo was put in chains by Clum and sent in a wagon to San Carlos. They were all settled at what is now Geronimo, at that time a malaria-infested area along the Gila River. The Chiricahua and Mimbrenño hated the

confinement. They were used to ranging even down into the Sierra Madre of Mexico. Conditions quickly became volatile.

To make matters worse, Clum began to feel that the government treated him unfairly. He finally resigned his San Carlos position in a huff in July 1877. He went to the new town of Tombstone and became editor of the Tombstone Epitaph. Later he became mayor of the town and fast friend of the Earp brothers. After John Clum resigned from his position, no one could control the Mimbreno and Chiricahua. Victorio finally broke out in September 1877. United States and Mexican armies hounded his people for hundreds of miles. They were finally driven deep into the desolate Chihuahua desert south of Texas. Finally, in October 1880, at Tres Castillos, Victorio and most of his people were massacred by Mexican troops under Joaquín Terrazas. Only the remarkable 70-year-old Nana and a few of his followers escaped. For two months in the summer of 1881 Nana eluded 1400 troops in a thousand-mile campaign with only 40 warriors. He later joined with Geronimo.

By the summer of 1881 conditions were truly unbearable on the San Carlos Reservation. Soon, an austere medicine man at Fort Apache, Noch-ay-del-kinne, began preaching that two dead beloved Indian leaders would be resurrected and the white man would leave Apache country. The military began to fear his influence. In August 1881 the troops killed the medicine man at Cibecue, and Geronimo decided that he could no longer live in peace. In the spring of 1882 he returned to San Carlos and made all the remaining Chiricahua go with him to Mexico.

In the spring of 1886 General Crook conducted another campaign in the Sierra Madre looking for Geronimo. He was finally able to make a treaty with him at Cañón de los Embudos, just south of the Arizona-Sonora border. However, on the return trip Geronimo broke out again. This time Crook was furious. Crook also began to receive messages from his commander, General Phillip Sheridan, that he considered insulting. Sheridan seemed to imply that Crook was too soft on Geronimo. Therefore, Crook asked to be relieved from his position, and General Sheridan complied. General Nelson Miles became Crook's replacement.

Over the next five months Miles employed 5000 troops in his hunt for Geronimo's tiny band of 35 warriors and about 80 women and children. Incredible exploits took place in the Sierra Madre, and finally on 4 September 1886, Geronimo finally surrendered at Skeleton Canyon, Arizona. It was not General Miles, however, who did the actual capture; it was Lieutenant Charles B. Gatewood and the Chiricahua Apache scouts Martine and Kayitah.

Geronimo and his band were taken to Fort Bowie and shipped out on a train to Florida. The rest of the Chiricahua who had remained peaceful at Turkey Creek were also shamefully shipped to Florida. They had done nothing to deserve this fate, but General Miles meant to "teach them all a lesson." Even the Chiricahua scouts who had helped find Geronimo were sent to Florida! Eventually, the Chiricahua, who managed to survive the disease and neglect in the East were sent to Oklahoma, where Geronimo died in February 1909. In the spring of 1913 most of the Chiricahua requested that they be allowed to live with their friends the Mescalero Apaches in New Mexico, they are there to this day. However, some of the Chiricahua remained in Oklahoma, and some of their descendants are still there today. The Chiricahua, as a tribe, were never allowed to return to Arizona.

## **The Organized Militia**

For the next fifteen years, all well marked by considerable Indian strife, Arizona had a number of local volunteer organizations and vigilantes. Many volunteer units ranked as militia organized themselves in the desire to help fight the Apache and to protect the citizens against outlaws. Among these troops were the Galeyville Militia and the Phoenix Rangers. J. S. Vosburg, Adjutant General during 1873-1876, reported to Governor A. P. K. Safford in his 1874 Annual Report. "Your Adjutant General has endeavored to carry out the duties of this office with the little amount of equipment that we have available. This office has rendered service to the exposed settlers of this territory by furnishing them with arms. These arms were given to those most

exposed and to those who were unable to purchase. Some men who obtained these arms and carried them out of the country, or bartered them.”

“The arms and ammunition were of much good to the most of these settlers. In a letter to the Chief of Ordnance in 1873 asking for additional arms – The Chief of Ordnance informed me that the Territory of Arizona had overdrawn its quota in the sum of \$7,354.97 and that the annual apportionment for this Territory due the Territory was only about \$1,600.00, so that it will be several years before any arms are due. It is quite necessary to have a few stands of arms in each county, kept in some secure place for use in an emergency.”

In 1877 the Territorial Legislature, realizing the need for a more effective territorial military force, authorized the organization of militia and appropriated \$10,000 for its use. The First Regiment, Arizona Infantry Volunteers was constituted into the First Arizona Infantry. Then, unit-by-unit, in the several larger communities of Arizona, the First Arizona Infantry Regiment was formed. Prescott led with the organization of the so-called Mulligan Guards about 1882, this soon became known as the Prescott Grays. There, the famed Buckey O’Neill became the Captain of this organization that included many men of stature, such as Barry Goldwater’s father and uncle, and other territorial officials, merchants and professional men.

The story is told how Dennis W. Dilda was convicted for cattle rustling and murder of the deputy sheriff and was sentenced to hang in Prescott for his crime. It was reported that territorial executions were conducted as “bald-faced object lessons for prospective evildoers and were carried out with the public on hand.” In this particular instance resentment was extraordinarily rife and there was talk of concluding Dilda’s career in a manner beyond the law. Captain Buckey O’Neill was ordered to protect the hanging with a formation of the Prescott Grays. There, in Prescott, on 4 February 1866, convicted murderer Dilda was hanged after a breakfast of breaded spring chicken, cream sauce, fried oysters, lamb chops, green peas, tenderloin steak with mushrooms, english pancakes with jelly, potatoes, bread and coffee.

The Grays formed a square about the gallows. Though the criminal’s conviction was legal and proper; it seemed to O’Neill that the accused had simply no chance in the western tradition. As the sheriff’s hands were raised in a signal for Dilda’s hanging, Captain O’Neill raised his saber in salute and gave the command “Present Arms.” Then the great Buckey O’Neill passed out cold in a faint right before his company and all present. People turned from the ghastly sight to find Buckey outstretched in the dust. Friends rushed to pick him up and he immediately revived. Too late, he never lived the moment down. Buckey was always quick to admit that he couldn’t stand to see anyone killed when “he didn’t have a chance.”

Buckey’s spirit and fight can easily be traced to their source. His father, Captain John O’Neill retired from Fredericksburg with five wounds as souvenirs, only part of fourteen sustained throughout the Civil War. Captain John, as he was known, raised a company of volunteers to fight in the Union Army. He fought as an officer with Company K, 116<sup>th</sup> Pennsylvania Volunteers, part of the famous Meagher’s Irish Brigade, so brilliant in the annals of the Civil War. Buckey continued his early education through Gonzaga where he gained a thorough knowledge of printing and during these years acquired his skill with every sort of firearm. After graduating from National University’s course in law and before he could settle down to serious practice, he succumbed to a severe attack of wanderlust. He was a typesetter, printer, lawyer, judge, stockman, miner and school superintendent. Gambler – and who in Arizona weren’t? Mayor of Prescott, sheriff and soldier, Buckey was all of these. With a couple of enemies and thousands of friends, he was more than a son of Arizona. Whatever faults his enemies found, they quickly agreed on this, “Buckey O’Neill was a damn fine fellow.” Little did he realize, or care perhaps, that his wanderlust would lead him straight to Arizona where he would share in blazing out the history of the West with such a diametrically opposite sort of man like Wyatt Earp.

Sad to say, by 1887 only the two companies in Prescott could be accepted as regularly organized militia, something had to be done. In 1889 Buckey O’Neill was appointed Adjutant General of the Territory and handwritten extracts later made by Colonel George Hochderffer from the Adjutant

Generals Report for 1890 indicate the problems encountered with the organization and equipping of the National Guard in the territory.

Captain O'Neill reported the National Guard of Arizona to now be comprised of seven separate companies of infantry, armed and equipped, with an aggregate strength of 313 officers and men. The seven companies were commanded and stationed as follows:

Company A, Captain William DeWitt	Prescott
Company B, Captain R. C. Andre	Phoenix
Company C, Captain Harry Kislingbury	Flagstaff
Company D, Captain John H. Martin	Tucson
Company E, Captain A. J. Doran	Florence
Company F, Captain John M. Trayer	Tucson
Company G, Captain Hampton S. Ford	Tombstone

He further stated, "The organization of the Guard, as at present, dates from February 22, 1890, when the first company was mustered in at Prescott. Prior to that time little attention had been manifested in the subject that the Territory was the only member in the Union which the General Government declined to recognize as being entitled to any portion of the appropriation made annually by it for arming and equipping the National Militia. So far had this unpatriotic disregard of the organization and maintenance of a citizen soldiery developed that as a factor in our Territorial institutions and militia received neither aid nor recognition. Owing to this condition of affairs the work of organization was slow and laborious, while the lack of funds available for that purpose proved a serious impediment. Quartermaster's and ordnance stores issued during 1890, from the funds due July 1, 1888, to organize companies of the National Guard of Arizona, on requisitions of the Governor, \$8,165.19. Balance to the credit of the Territory December 31, 1890, \$3,349.26."

Colonel Edwin S. Gill was appointed Adjutant General on March 31, 1891 and General Orders Number 3, Headquarters National Guard of Arizona, dated May 14, 1891, stated in part "The companies of the National Guard at present organized and existing in the Territory of Arizona, are hereby organized and shall be officially known and designated as the First Regiment National Guard of Arizona, and Colonel Alexander O. Brodie is hereby assigned to command of same, with authority to designate the location of the Regimental Headquarters." Colonel Gill submitted the following in his Annual Report ending December of that year. "The National Guard of Arizona now consists of one regiment of infantry, composed of nine companies, organized into three battalions. The annual returns for the year show a present force of 288 officers and enlisted men. This report embraces only seven companies and the regimental and two battalion organizations. Companies A and C having failed to comply with orders issued, Colonel Brodie directed them to turn in their arms and equipments (sic). Efforts are now making to re-organize both companies upon a firm basis, and I hope to be able to report success in a short time. The remaining companies are now recruiting and expect to soon have an enrollment of from 45 to 55 men each."

"Previous to March 19, 1891, Arizona had no Military Code, hence the present organization really dates subsequent to that time. Seven independent companies were organized during the summer and fall of 1890, but the lack of State aid caused the members to lose interest, and from December 1890, until April 1891, hardly a drill was had. Another company known as "H" had been organized at Yuma, in January, 1891, but pending the action of the Legislature nothing was done towards equipping it."

"The Code as adopted provides that "The organized militia shall consist of ten companies, \* \* \* of which the companies now formed shall form a part. \* \* \* Infantry companies may be organized into battalions of not less than two nor more than six companies, and such battalions into regiments of not less than two nor more than three battalions. To each regiment there shall be one Colonel, one Lieutenant Colonel, three Majors, \* \* \* who shall be commissioned by the Commander-in-Chief. \* \* \* Each company duly organized under the provisions of this Code shall

receive \$30 per month to defray the expenses of maintaining such company, said amount payable monthly out of any funds in the Territorial Treasury not otherwise appropriated.”

The Adjutant Generals Report showed the following officer assignments at the end of 1891.

**Staff of Commander-in-Chief**

Colonel Edwin S. Gill, Phoenix, Adjutant General, ex-Officio  
Quartermaster, Commissary-General and Chief of Ordnance  
Colonel Scott Helm, Phoenix, Surgeon-General  
Colonel Jerry Millay, Phoenix, Judge-Advocate-General  
Lieutenant Colonel William Roy, Nogales, Aid-de-Camp  
Lieutenant Colonel Mariano G. Samaniego, Tucson, Aid-de-Camp

**First Regiment**

Headquarters at Prescott  
Colonel Alexander O. Brodie, Prescott  
Lieutenant Colonel Andrew J. Doran, Florence  
First Lieutenant Orrick Jackson, Prescott, Adjutant  
First Lieutenant George W. Cheyney, Tombstone, Quartermaster  
First Lieutenant J. Harry Carpenter, Yuma, Commissary  
Major George Goodfellow, Tucson, Surgeon  
Captain D. J. Brennan, Flagstaff, Assistant Surgeon  
First Lieutenant Albert S. Adler, Florence, Assistant Surgeon

**First Battalion**

Companies A, C and I – Headquarters at Prescott  
Major William DeWitt, Prescott  
Hedrick N. Aitken, (Town not shown), Adjutant  
Major DeWitt resigned December 12, 1891. Further organization of Battalion awaiting reorganization of Companies A and C.

**Second Battalion**

Companies B, E, and H – Headquarters at Phoenix  
Major Joseph B. Creamer, Phoenix  
First Lieutenant R. Allyn Lewis, Phoenix, Adjutant  
First Lieutenant George E. Truman, Florence, Quartermaster  
First Lieutenant Frank B. Wighman, Yuma, Commissary

**Third Battalion**

Companies D, F, and G – Headquarters at Tucson  
Major John H. Martin, Tucson  
First Lieutenant Willard S. Wright, Tucson, Adjutant  
First Lieutenant M. Mariscal, Tucson, Quartermaster  
First Lieutenant Hampton S. Ford, Tombstone, Commissary

**Company A – Prescott  
(Reorganizing)**

**Company B – Phoenix**  
Captain John W. Chrenshaw  
First Lieutenant Henry J. Jessop  
Second Lieutenant Herbert F. Robinson

**Company C – Flagstaff  
(Reorganizing)**

**Company D – Tucson**  
Captain Allan C. Bernard

**First Lieutenant John A. Black**  
**Second Lieutenant Moses Drachman**

**Company E – Florence**  
**Captain Harry V. Jackson**  
**First Lieutenant W. Wood Porter**  
**Second Lieutenant John G. Keating**

**Company F – Tucson**  
**Captain John M. Trayer**  
**First Lieutenant Bernabe C. Brichta**  
**Second Lieutenant Eraclio M. Hutton**

**Company G – Tombstone**  
**Captain Thomas Mounier**  
**First Lieutenant to be elected**  
**Second Lieutenant Lewis C. Aubury**

**Company H – Yuma**  
**(Not mentioned)**

The necessity of more armed men in the northern part of the Arizona Territory prompted George Hochderffer to organize a second National Guard unit in Flagstaff in April 1891. He was elected Captain and Colonel Edwin S. Gill, Adjutant General, mustered in the company at Flagstaff on July 11, 1891. Hockderffer's account of the participation of Company C and Company I, 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry, in engagements in Northern Arizona, assisting Sheriff John W. Francis in the quelling of Indian depredations in July 1891 were later recorded in the office of the Adjutant General. Hochderffer listed among the participants in these engagements, Sheriff John W. Francis, William Ashurst, father of Senator Ashurst, Tom Tryer, William Babbitt, John Marshall, Godfrey Sykes, Stanley Sykes, Frank Copelan, Walter Durham, Al Doyle, William Morris, Joe Tituo, Undersheriff Fletcher Fairchilds and Jeff Venters, all civilians. Among the participating National Guardsmen, Orestia Gibson, Charles McLean, George Campbell, B. M. Spencer, Captain George Hochderffer, Captain Harry Kislbury and First Lieutenant William E. Hochderffer. "The prompt action by the Sheriff and by the two companies of the National Guardsmen, prevented what would have been the most disastrous Indian trouble in the Territory of Arizona," Colonel Hochderffer later wrote.

Captain Hochderffer first joined Company C at Flagstaff the date it was mustered into service of the Territory of Arizona by Captain "Buckey" O'Neill, Adjutant General. He retired as Lieutenant Colonel, 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry on November 14, 1904. He was re-commissioned Captain and resumed command of Company I, on August 20, 1906 and finally retired on September 5, 1910. Colonel Hockderffer was Team Representative of the Arizona Territory, 3<sup>rd</sup> National Match Rifle Team at Camp Perry, Ohio. George Hochderffer, Lewis Wilfred Coggins and Carl Trumbull Hayden were all appointed Colonel, Infantry, National Guard of Arizona and placed on the Honorary Retired List, National Guard of Arizona, on 20 March 1952. Colonel Hochderffer was a pioneer Arizona Stockman, member of the 11<sup>th</sup> Legislature, 3d Session, November 1934, former Sergeant at Arms of the Arizona Legislature and Vice-president of the Arizona Pioneers Association.

A review of orders for this period and subsequent years up to the Spanish American War revealed considerable turbulence within the officer corps, including the Adjutants General, with numerous appointments, resignations and reassignments. Appointment to Adjutant General during this period began with William H. Garvin, 1863; D. H. Stickney and J. H. Toole, 1868; Edward Phelps, 1869; J. S. Vosberg, 1873; C. S. Curtis, 1877; William Bushford, 1879; Clark Churchill, 1881; M. H. Sherman, 1883; J. F. Meader, 1885; William O. (Buckey) O'Neill, 1889; Edwin S. Gill, 1891; Joseph B. Creamer, 1892; George W. Brown, 1892; Edward Schwartz, 1893; R. Allyn Lewis, 1897; and H. F. Robinson, 1898. This could not be considered unusual, since this same turbulence existed with the organization and equipping the companies in the regiment during these early

years. This continuing turbulence is evident in 1892 with the publication of General Orders, Number 1, February 20, 1892 and General Orders Number 3.

“Company H, First Regiment, located at Yuma, having become reduced to a minimum less than that required by law and its disbandment (sic) recommended, the Company Commander is hereby directed to discharge all members of the company and ship all ordnance and other stores now in possession of the Company to the Commanding Officer of Company C, at Flagstaff, requiring receipt for the same. Upon transfer of stores and receipt for same being acknowledged, the commission of Captain Willis will be cancelled and himself and bondsmen relieved from all further responsibility.”

“The application of F. S. Ingalls and thirty-five other citizens of Yuma, Arizona for the formation of a Company of National Guard in that place having been approved by the Commander in Chief. Lieutenant John H, Carpenter, Regimental Commissary, is hereby directed to muster the applicants into the service on Wednesday, May 11, 1892, after which company officers will be elected, Lieutenant Carpenter presiding at such election.”

“When mustered in the company shall be known as Company H of the First Regiment of Infantry, N.G.A., and shall be attached to the Second Battalion of said Regiment.” General Orders Number 8, May 18, 1892 verified the muster of Company H, election and commissions were issued to F.S. Ingalls as Captain and W. F. Hefferman, Lieutenant.

General Orders Number 6, 16 May 1892, respectively, announced the resignation of Colonel Alexander O. Brodie, commanding the First Infantry Regiment. General Orders Number 7, 17 May 1892 directed an election for Colonel of the First Infantry Regiment to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation. The Order further stated, “Inasmuch as the station of the several companies are so widely separated it will be impracticable and almost impossible to comply with the provisions of \* \* \* Military Code of the Territory of Arizona, regarding the presence of the line officers at any assembly that might be called for the purpose of such election; the following method has been adopted:

“The commissioned officers of the several companies comprising the First Infantry Regiment, N.G.A., will enclose a slip of paper with the name of the member of the N.G.A. whom they may prefer for the office, together with their own signature, company and rank, seal it in an envelope, endorse the envelope “Ballot for Colonel, First Infantry Regiment, N.G.A., and send to \* \* \* on which day and hour envelopes will be opened, the results certified to by Col. Brodie will be forwarded to the office of the Adjutant General for such action as may properly be taken.”

Colonel Gill resigned as Adjutant General of the Territory and it was accepted to take effect on the qualification of his successor. George W. Brown was appointed Adjutant General with the rank of Colonel effective June 15, 1892. General Orders Number 11, Headquarters National Guard of Arizona, July 16, 1892, Tucson, indicated that an election for Major of the Third Battalion, vice Martin elected Colonel, commander, First Infantry Regiment, was held in Tucson on the 15<sup>th</sup> Day of July 1892 and Captain J. A. Black, commanding Company D, Third Battalion was declared elected Major, commander of the Third Battalion, First Infantry Regiment, to date from June 10, 1892.

It is interesting to note that the Company Commanders responsibilities covered in the Annual Report submitted by Colonel Brown specified, “Commanders should impress on the mind of every man that it is his duty to become as good a shot as possible; that the failure of one man in a company cuts down the average of that company in just that proportion. That “Shooting to hit” is the objective point of the military art. All other studies and drills are for the purpose of placing a soldier in a position to do this effectually (sic).”

An application from George Estes and fifty-four other citizens of St. Johns, Arizona, for the formation of a Company at that place was approved and General Orders Number 13, August 20, 1892 directed Captain George Hochderffer to proceed to St. Johns and muster the applicants into the service on Wednesday, August 31<sup>st</sup> 1892 and to preside over a company election of

officers. The Orders further specified that the Company would be designated as Company K of the First Regiment of Infantry and attached to the First Battalion.

General Orders Number 14, November 28, 1892 indicated that Company K, St. Johns, was duly mustered into service and George Estes was duly elected Captain, Albert F. Banta was elected First Lieutenant and Charles Jarvis, Second Lieutenant. The Orders further appointed First Lieutenant R. Allyn Lewis to be Major, vice Joseph B. Creamer, resigned, and assigned to duty in command of the Second Battalion. All Orders appointing or promoting officers during this period included the general statement; "he will be respected and obeyed accordingly."

The expansion of the First Infantry regiment continued with the application of eighty citizens of Globe, Arizona for the formation of a company. General Orders Number 17, 12 December 1892 directed Captain John G. Keating to proceed to Globe and muster the applicants into service on Wednesday, December 21<sup>st</sup> 1892 and to preside at such an election of officers. The Company was designated as Company A, First Regiment of Infantry, attached to the Second Battalion. The report summarized the years organizational activities as, "During the past year Company H, located at Yuma, underwent a complete reorganization; Company A, at Prescott, and Company C, at Flagstaff were disbanded. Two new companies were mustered into service. Company K, at St. Johns, and Company A, at Globe, the former having received its arms and equipments (sic) and is striving with zeal towards proficiency in military knowledge."

The Annual Report stated that, "the Military Code was somewhat indefinite with reference to the commissioned staff of the battalions, but custom has given to each one adjutant, one quartermaster, and one commissary, each with the rank of first Lieutenant. Each Company consists of one captain, one first lieutenant, one first sergeant, one quartermaster sergeant, four sergeant, six corporals and from twenty to sixty-six privates."

The organizations of the regiment were reported as quite evenly distributed throughout the Territory, as follows:

Colonel J. H. Martin commands the regiment, with headquarters at Tucson.

The First Battalion, at present without a major, consists of Companies C, K, and I and is located in the northern part of the Territory.

Second Battalion, Companies A, B, E, and H, Major R. Allyn Lewis commanding, with headquarters at Phoenix.

Third Battalion, Companies D, F, and G, Major J. A. Black commanding with headquarters at Tucson.

Edward Schwartz, The Adjutant General for the period 1893-1896, submitted the Annual Report for 1895. Edward Schwartz was a former City of Phoenix Recorder, Police Judge and twice elected member of the Phoenix City Council. He reported that the militia of Arizona now consists of ten companies of Infantry and the Regimental Band, in all enrolling 503 individuals, a gain of 93 over the previous year. During the year Company G disbanded at Tombstone and was reorganized at Nogales. In reference to the duties of a militiaman he observes:

"The National Guard has a double duty to perform: First - As a citizen in strict observance of the law of the land, and by every moral force in his power upholding the supremacy of the same. Second - When the constituted authorities have failed in the preservation of peace, and the protection of life and property with the civil power, then as a soldier of the State, he is adding his physical power to the maintenance of the laws which as a citizen he has endeavored to support."

This continuing turbulence within the Guard can be better understood with the Adjutant General's remarks in this 1895 Annual Report. "Up to the present date the national government has issued to the territory of Arizona, since the organization of the national Guard (four years),

arms, ammunition, clothing and equipments (sic) to the money value of about \$12,000, which are now in the possession of the guard, and for which the company commanders are responsible. This, of course, is the total of all army supplies in the territory, the territorial government never having made any appropriation for the maintenance of its national guard except \$30 a month for each company for armory rent."

"The commissioned officer of the guard is not furnished with anything, either by the national or territorial governments. He is required to furnish his own uniform, arms, equipments (sic) and horses, when the latter is necessary."

"Commendable progress has been in target practice. The appointment of Major Bainbridge, of the U. S. Army, to inspect the militia of the territory was nullified by the lack of means in the militia to fund the expenses of the inspector. The duty was then undertaken by Major R. A. Lewis of the second battalion, who, at his own expense, has visited and thoroughly inspected every company in the territory save one."

"Recommendations are that the present regiment be strengthened to twelve companies. That three companies of cavalry at least, and one light battery of artillery be added. That the appropriation made by the national government be increased to four thousand dollars annually. That the company allowance of thirty dollars per month for company expenses and armory rental be increased to a least fifty dollars."

"As there is a strong, concerted movement throughout the United States to introduce military tactics in the higher graded of our public schools, the coming legislature should enact a law making the military sciences one of the studies of the public school of our territory. This can be done with little, if any, expense to the territory, as we have several thousand stands of arms within our territory (of the old pattern) not in use by the guard, which can be utilized by the different educational institutions for drill purposes. And I have no doubt that an old soldier could be found in every settlement who would willingly give a portion of his time to instruct our young men."

He further reported in 1896 that, "On and after the 15<sup>th</sup> of June 1896, that battalion formation in the First regiment of infantry will be re-established. Major John A. Black, First Infantry, is hereby ordered to assume command of the First Battalion of the First Infantry Regiment, which will be composed of Companies A, D, F and G of the First infantry. Major R. Allyn Lewis, First Infantry, will assume command of the Second Battalion First Infantry, which will be composed of Companies B, C, E and H of the First Infantry."

"Owing to the geographical locations of the companies of the First Regiment it is impossible to form the Third Battalion at the present without manifest injury to the service." Company K, First Infantry, stationed at St. Johns, will transmit all official communications through and receive all orders and communications direct from regimental headquarters. Until arrangements can be made to re-equip Company I, no official duty will be expected of it."

"Colonel John H. Martin, First Infantry, is hereby placed in command of the First Regiment of Infantry with headquarters at Tucson, Arizona."

On October 6<sup>th</sup> 1896, Edward Schwartz, the Adjutant General submitted the following special report to the Honorable B. J. Franklin, Governor of Arizona.

"Sir:

"I have the honor to submit the following special Report of the attack of Jacqui and Temochi Indians upon the Custom House, at Nogales, Sonora, just across the line from Nogales, Arizona.

I have investigated the Jacqui Indian troubles at Nogales, in the state of Sonora, Mexico, and the adjacent country. I am informed that this uprising has its origin in the state of Sonora, Mexico.

The State of Sonora, Mexico, is infested with bands of Indian outlaws and desperadoes, who occasionally gather in small bands and attack the settlements in that state and when pursued by the Mexican authorities across into Arizona, and thus elude capture or arrest.

The Arizona Civil Authorities cannot always prevent this; these bodies are sometimes very strong and well armed and mounted.

The band of Yacqui and Temochi Indians who made the attack upon the Custom House at Nogales, Sonora, on the morning of the 12<sup>th</sup> day of August 1896, was between forty and sixty strong, they were well armed and mounted, the attack lasted three hours; eight of the Indians were killed and one captured, six of the Mexican Officials were killed; no casualties occurred on this side of the line.

The Indians were finally driven off and crossed over into Arizona Territory, at the town of Nogales, Arizona. (It should be understood that Nogales, Sonora and Nogales, Arizona, is in reality one town, divided by a very narrow street.)

The Indians were pursued by the civil officers from Nogales, Arizona, who followed them until they scattered and the trail was lost, small squads have frequently been seen along the border since.

The National Guard can give no assistance in such cases; the Territorial "Military Code of Arizona" makes no provisions whereby the National Guard can be called out for such duty, we have no money (to either purchase supplies or pay the Officers and enlisted men if ordered out.)

This condition of affairs makes it unsafe and dangerous for the settlers on the southern border of the Territory, arrangements should be made to prevent these armed bodies of Indians from entering the Territory.

I am of the opinion that one or two Troops of U. S. Cavalry stationed at Nogales, Arizona, could accomplish this end."

Brigadier General R. Allyn Lewis was appointed Brigadier General and Adjutant General on 30 July 1897. General Lewis was transferred to National Guard Veterans on Special Order Number 11, Adjutant Generals Office, dated 8 August 1898.

Major Herbert F. Robinson was appointed Brigadier General, Adjutant General, Territory of Arizona on 5 August 1889 and served in that capacity until 1 October 1902. General Robinson enlisted in Company B, 1<sup>st</sup> Infantry, National Guard of Arizona on 13 March 1890. He was appointed Second Lieutenant, Company B on 7 April 1891 and served with the First Arizona Infantry and Instructor of Small Arms Practice, Headquarters, National Guard of Arizona until his appointment as Adjutant General. General Robinson was the first president of the Arizona Society of the Sons of the American Revolution (1896-1898).

## **Spanish American War**

Soon came the Spanish-American War and scores of Arizonans answered the call of the President for Westerners to join the First Volunteer Cavalry organization, the famed "Rough Riders". The Arizona Regiment was not called into service, but ten of the regiment's officers and 117 enlisted men volunteered to swell the ranks of the Rough Riders. When the United States declared war on Spain in 1898, Arizona's young men were eager to volunteer. Colonel Alexander O. Brodie, a West Point graduate who served under General Crook in the Apache campaign and former Adjutant General of the Arizona National Guard, was the leader in organizing the two troops of cavalry in the Arizona Territory. Captain William O. "Buckey" O'Neill recruited the northern part of the territory. Captain James H. McClintock recruited the southern part. By April 29, 1898, two troops of two hundred fifteen men, Arizona's allotment, were ready to leave for San Antonio, Texas.

As Roosevelt described these men, "in all the world there could be no better material for soldiers than that afforded by these grim hunters of the mountains, these wild rough riders of the plains. They were accustomed to handling wild and savage horses; they were accustomed to following the chase with the rifle, both for sport and as a means of livelihood. Varied though their occupations had been, almost all had, at one time or another herded cattle and hunted big game. They were hardened to life in the open, and to shifting for themselves under adverse circumstances. They were used, for all their lawless freedom, to the rough discipline of the round up and the mining company. Some of them came from the small frontier towns; but most were from the wilderness, having left their lonely hunters' cabins and shifting cow-camps to seek new and more stirring adventures beyond the sea. They had their natural leaders—the men who had shown they could master other men, and could more than hold their own in the eager driving life of the new settlements. The Captains and Lieutenants were sometimes men who had campaigned in the regular army against Apache, Ute, and Cheyenne, and who, on completing their term of service, had shown their energy by settling in the new communities and growing up to be men of mark. In other cases they were sheriffs, marshals, deputy-sheriffs, and deputy-marshals—men who had fought Indians, and still more often had waged relentless war upon the bands of white desperadoes. There was Buckey O'Neill, of Arizona, Captain of Troop A, the Mayor of Prescott, a famous sheriff throughout the West for his feats of victorious warfare against the Apache, no less than against the white road-agents and man-killers. His father had fought in Meagher's Brigade in the Civil War; and he was himself a born soldier, a born leader of men. He was a wild, reckless fellow, soft spoken, and of dauntless courage and boundless ambition; he was staunchly loyal to his friends, and cared for his men in every way. There was Captain Llewellyn, of New Mexico, a good citizen, a political leader, and one of the most noted peace officers of the country; he had been shot four times in pitched fights with red marauders and white outlaws. There was Lieutenant Ballard, who had broken up the Black Jack gang of ill-omened notoriety, and his Captain, Curry, another New Mexican sheriff of fame. The officers from the Indian Territory had almost all served as marshals and deputy-marshals; and in the Indian Territory, service as a deputy-marshal meant capacity to fight stand-up battles with the gangs of outlaws. Three of the regiment's higher officers had been in the regular army. One was Major Alexander Brodie, from Arizona, afterward Lieutenant Colonel, who had lived for twenty years in the Territory, and had become a thorough Westerner without sinking the West Pointer—a soldier by taste as well as training, whose men worshipped him and would follow him anywhere, as they would Bucky O'Neill or any other of their favorites."

After the recruits reached San Antonio they became part of the First United States Volunteer Cavalry, to be known later as the Rough Riders. The Commanding Officer was Colonel Leonard Wood, who had served in Arizona during the Indian wars, where he had been awarded the Medal of Honor. Colonel Wood was one of two medical officers in the history of the United States Army to be put in command of troops. His Executive Officer was Lieutenant Colonel Theodore Roosevelt, who had resigned as Assistant Secretary of the Navy to serve with the First Volunteer Cavalry. After completing a short period of training the roughriders were ordered to Tampa, Florida, whence part of it sailed for Cuba on the transport Yucatan. It sufficiently indicates the state of chaos, which then reigned in Army preparations, that half the regiment and all the horses and mules were left behind. Arriving in Cuba, the first troops, accustomed only to the saddle, had to hobble along as best they could, on foot, so that some re-christened them "Wood's Weary Walkers."

The Arizonans landed near Santiago on June 22d and fought through the thick of the Cuban campaign. In their battle at Guasimas eight of them were killed, and they were buried in one grave. Afterward, in writing the history of the Rough Riders, Roosevelt said: "There could be no more honorable burial than that of these men in a common grave—Indian and cowboy, miner, packer, and college athlete—the man of unknown ancestry from the lonely Western plains, and the man who carried on his watch the crests of the Stuyvesants and the Fishes, one in the way they had met death, just as during life they had been one in their daring and their loyalty."

After the battle of Guasimas late in June, Colonel Wood was promoted to brigadier general and Teddy Roosevelt to colonel in command of the First Cavalry. The name Rough Riders had been

applied to the First Volunteer Cavalry several times while they trained in San Antonio. After Roosevelt was given command of the First, the regiment became known as Teddy Roosevelt's Rough Riders. He felt relieved when "Teddy's Terrors," one of the nicknames proposed, did not stick to them.

The most serious loss that Colonel Roosevelt and the regiment could have suffered befell just before they charged up Kettle Hill. As written in the Prescott Arizona Miner, July 4, 1907, "Nine years ago, July 1, as the Americans, soldiers, members of the Rough Riders, lay entrenched before San Juan Hill, awaiting the order from their superior to charge the foe, there walked back and forth, before his men, a captain of one of the troops of that famous fighting command, who, despite the repeated entreaties of his followers, would not seek shelter from the rain of Spanish bullets that swept down the, hill."

"Airily he smoked his cigarette, and glanced, ever, and anno (sic) [annoy], up the hill at the fortifications, with a supreme contempt for the poor marksmanship displayed by the Spaniards."

"Not that he did not realize the danger to which he was exposed; no man there knew better the meaning of a leaden bullet than he who so bravely faced the pitiless fire without flinching, or without thought of personal danger."

"Captain, please seek shelter; please lie down in the trenches," begged one of his men, a sergeant."

"Sergeant," replied, this brave soldier, who had but one thought in his mind at that time, his country and his flag, "the Spanish bullet is not made that can kill me."

"And again he resumed his walking, up and down, in front of his men. That man was, "Buckey" O'Neill, Arizona's hero. Brave, chivalrous, adventurous Captain William Owen O'Neill, in command of Troop A, Rough Riders."

"Hardly had the reckless, slightly boasting words passed his lips, than Buckey O'Neill fell, struck by the bullet he had so shortly derided. The leaden missile of death entered his mouth and forehead, passed out at the rear of his head, and before his stalwart frame sank trembling to the ground his gallant soul had gone forth, to its maker."

Both lieutenants of B Troop from Arizona had been exerting themselves greatly, and the heat overcame both; but Sergeants Campbell and Davidson took it forward. Some of the men from this troop and from the other Arizona troop (Buckey O'Neill's) joined Colonel Roosevelt as a kind of fighting tail. The Ninth Regiment was immediately in front of Roosevelt, and the First on his left, and these went up Kettle Hill with the regiment. The Third, Sixth, and Tenth went partly up Kettle Hill, following the Rough Riders and the Ninth and First, and partly between that and the blockhouse hill, which the infantry were assailing. General Sumner in person gave the Tenth the order to charge the hills; and it went forward at a rapid gait. The three regiments went forward more or less intermingled, advancing steadily and keeping up a heavy fire.

The regiment had three mascots; the two most characteristic, a young mountain lion brought by the Arizona troops, and a war eagle brought by the New Mexicans that they had been forced to leave behind in Tampa. The third, a rather disreputable but exceedingly knowing little dog named Cuba, had accompanied the regiment through all the vicissitudes of the campaign. The mountain lion, Josephine, possessed an infernal temper; whereas both Cuba and the eagle, which have been named in Roosevelt's honor, were extremely good-humored. Josephine was kept tied up. She sometimes escaped. One cool night in early September she wandered off and, entering the tent of a Third Cavalry man, got into bed with him; whereupon he fled into the darkness with yells, much more unnerved than he would have been by the arrival of any number of Spaniards. The eagle was let loose and not only walked at will up and down the company streets, but also at times flew wherever he wished. He was a young bird, having been taken out of his nest when a fledgling. Josephine hated him and was always trying to make a meal of him, especially when they endeavored to take their photographs together. The eagle, though good-natured, was an

entirely competent animal and ready at any moment to beat Josephine off. Cuba was also oppressed at times by Josephine, and was of course no match for her, but was frequently able to overawe her by simple decision of character.

One afternoon after return to the United States, to Colonel Roosevelt's surprise, he was asked out of his tent by Lieutenant Colonel Brodie and found the whole regiment formed in hollow square, with the officers and color sergeant in the middle. When he went in, one of the troopers' came forward and on behalf of the regiment presented him with Remington's fine bronze, "The Bronco-buster." The next morning Sergeant Wright took down the colors, and Sergeant Guitillas the standard, for the last time. The horses, the rifles, and the rest of the regimental property had been turned in. Officers and men shook hands and said good-by to one another, and then they scattered to their homes in the North and the South, the few going back to the great cities of the East, the many turning again toward the plains, the mountains, and the deserts of the West and the strange Southwest. This was on September 15th, the day, which marked the close of the four months' life of a regiment that Colonel Roosevelt considered as the "most gallant fighters as ever wore the United States uniform."

In 1907 the citizens of Arizona paid the group its greatest tribute. A Solon Borglum Bronze horse mounted statue portraying a Rough Rider in action was unveiled in Prescott. Down through the years this statue has come to be known as the Buckey O'Neill statue. This fine monument stands today on the courthouse lawn in Prescott, a monument from the citizens of the Territory not only to this distinguished Arizona Guardsman, lawman and statesman, but to all those Arizona volunteers who served in the Rough Riders.

The Rough Riders were not the only troops raised in Arizona during the war. Governor Myron H. McCord resigned in August 1898, to assume command of the First Territorial Volunteer Infantry Regiment. Three companies of Arizona Volunteers trained at Fort Hamilton near Lexington, Kentucky, with units of other territories. The regiment was not sent overseas, but lost five soldiers from typhoid fever, yellow fever and malaria.

Mr. David Swing painted numerous paintings depicting scenes from the Spanish-American War in 1929. These paintings were originally hung in the Jefferson Street Armory in downtown Phoenix, until the building was demolished for commercial development. Mr. Swing was born in Cincinnati, Ohio, moving to Phoenix in 1917. He did mainly huge canvases and murals, using any paints, including house paint. Mr. Swing did 14 murals for the San Francisco Golden Gate Exposition. The Spanish American War paintings were hung in the 52d Street Armory until the roof leaked and soiling the paintings. The paintings were removed and improperly stored until recovered by the Arizona Military Museum. When recovered, they all had large tears and splits in the canvas fabric. Some of these paintings were repaired and partially restored by the museum staff. Only complete repainting of the scenes depicted could completely repair the rainwater stains. Some of these painting are still on display for view by the general public at the museum.

## **Organizing The National Guard**

Benjamin W. Leavell retired from the Army as a Major on March 12, 1902. Broken in health as a result of the rigors of the war he came to Tempe to Live. Shortly thereafter he was appointed Colonel, Arizona National Guard and designated Adjutant General of the Territory by Governor Alexander O. Brodie. Colonel Leavell entered the U. S. Military Academy as a cadet on July 1, 1875 and was appointed Second Lieutenant in the 24<sup>th</sup> Regiment of Infantry 13 June 1879. As a captain he served with the 26<sup>th</sup> Regiment of Infantry in the Spanish American War.

In 1824 the 7th Regiment of the New York State militia styled itself "National Guard," in honor of the French general the Marquis de Lafayette, who commanded the Garde National of France. By 1900 the designation had been adopted by most of the states. The Dick Act of 1903 officially established the National Guard and standardized its organization, structure, armaments, and discipline. The National Defense Act of 1916 made the guard subject to federal call upon approval

of state governors, and in 1933 Congress passed a bill giving the federal government direct authority to call up the guard.

In 1903 two great Arizonans becoming members of the First Arizona Infantry Regiment – Captains' Alexander M. Tuthill and Carl Trumbull Hayden. Dr. Tuthill became the Captain of the Second Cavalry Troop in Morenci; he was a distinguished industrial surgeon in civilian life and member of Arizona's Constitutional Convention. Captain Tuthill served as Colonel, commanding the First Arizona Infantry Regiment during Border Service against Pancho Villa in 1916-1917- later designated the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment. Brigadier General, Commanding the 79<sup>th</sup> Brigade, 40<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division A.E.F., Commander 89<sup>th</sup> Brigade, 45<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, Major General, Commanding the 45<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division and Adjutant General of Arizona 1936 to 1952.

Carl Hayden, who was serving as Sheriff of Maricopa County at the time, received a letter from Governor Alexander O. Brodie, requesting that he come to see him. When Hayden met with the Governor, he was told that he must become the Captain of Company C, Tempe, or the Governor would muster it out. As Hayden later wrote, "I protested that I had never had a military rifle in my hands, but he replied that I was a gentleman. I returned to Tempe, and by September 4, 1903 had persuaded about 30 other young men to join with me in enlisting in Company C, National Guard of Arizona, of which I was commissioned to be the Captain on October 31, 1903. We learned about the National Rifle Matches at Camp Perry, Ohio, and cleared the brush off a 1,000-yard rifle range across the Salt River from Tempe. A Majority of the Arizona Rifle teams at Camp Perry consisted of members of Company C in the years 1909, 1910 and 1911." Governor George W. P. Hunt promoted Captain Hayden to Major, 1st Battalion, 1st Infantry, National Guard of Arizona, on November 15, 1912, to rank from July 17 1909. During World War I he was commissioned a Major, United States Army and served as the Commanding Officer, 9<sup>th</sup> Battalion, 166<sup>th</sup> Depot Brigade, Camp Lewis, Washington.

Upon admission of Arizona as a State in 1912, Captain Hayden was elected to the Sixty-second Congress of the United States, where he served until 1969. Senator Hayden served as President pro tempore of the Senate during the Eighty-fifth through the Ninetieth Congresses. His record for fifty-six consecutive years of service in the Congress, including an unprecedented forty-two in the Senate, was unsurpassed at the time of his retirement. On March 20, 1952, Major General Alexander M. Tuthill appointed Senator Hayden to Colonel, Infantry, National Guard of Arizona, Honorary Retired List.

In August 1905 all of the organizations, except the First Cavalry Troop, took part in an encampment at Camp Brodie, Near Prescott. Under the command of Colonel James H. McClintock, the following units of the Regiment reported for duty:

**First Infantry, Phoenix**

Colonel James H. McClintock  
Lieutenant Colonel F.S. Breen  
Major E.M. Lamson  
Captain Edgar P. Grinstead, Adjutant  
Captain George A. Alkire, Q.M.  
Captain Frank T. Alkire, Commissary  
Captain John W. Foss, Assistant Surgeon  
Captain Harvey M. Shields, Chaplain

**Company B, Phoenix**

Captain James A. Parks  
1<sup>st</sup> Lieutenant George E. Miner  
2d Lieutenant C.I. Stacy

**Company C, Tempe**

Captain Carl T. Hayden  
1<sup>st</sup> Lieutenant John E. Campbell  
2d Lieutenant William H. Woolf

**Company D, Mesa**

Captain Orrin L. Standage  
1<sup>st</sup> Lieutenant D. Dudley Jones

**Company H, Yuma**

Captain H.H. Donkersley  
1<sup>st</sup> Lieutenant John Ketcherside  
2d Lieutenant Jim Polhamus

**Company I, Flagstaff**

Captain George F. Campbell  
Second Cavalry Troop, Morenci  
Captain Alexander M. Tuthill  
1<sup>st</sup> Lieutenant James N. Purdum  
2d Lieutenant H.S. Van Gorder

In accordance with orders, Companies B, C, D, H and the Second Cavalry Troop reported to the Commander at Phoenix on the morning of August 3 and Company I at Camp Brodie on the evening of the same day. Captain Charles E. Perkins, commanding the First Cavalry Troop, Nogales, reported by telegraph August 4, but too late for the service. The First Cavalry Troop was later ordered mustered out because of lack of interest and inefficiency. Colonel McClintock reported the encampment strength at 23 officers and 196 enlisted men.

The Final Report of the encampment by Colonel McClintock provided the following accounting of the regiment between the dates of August 2 through August 12. "Transportation for the command was by special train from Phoenix to a point beyond Prescott, about three miles from the camp. The work of the camp was modeled strictly upon the lines prescribed in the Regular Army. The daily order (Reveille) called up the command at 5:15 a.m. Guard mount was at 7:00 a.m., thereafter being Company and Battalion drills, preceded, respectively, by non-commissioned and commissioned officers' schools. In the afternoon of each day were field exercises, designed to give officers and men familiarity with the conditions of actual warfare. The locality was one especially well suited for the purpose; embracing rolling hills with small valleys, with rocky defiles and traversed with good roads. A number of tactical problems of attack and defense were worked out, the incident instruction being of great value to all participating."

"Officers, with few exceptions, were correctly clothed in service uniform. The men were uniformed in Khaki, with blue shirts, campaign hats and leggings, with shelter halves, blankets and mess kits. No blue uniforms were taken to camp; overcoats were taken, but were not needed. The arm of the regiment was the Krag-Jorgenson rifle, the Cavalry Troops being armed with the Krag carbine. At their own expense, the attending members of the Second Cavalry Troop purchased mounted equipment and rented, in Prescott, horses for the term of the encampment. The mounted troops proved of great service in escort duty and in the working out of several problems of tactics."

"Captain F. M. Irish, commanding the Cadet Company of the Normal School of Arizona at Tempe, was a welcome guest and gave valued help in many ways. One of the most pleasant features of the camp was the music of the band of the Phoenix Indian Industrial School, present through the courtesy of Superintendent C. W. Goodman. The organization already was well drilled in military exercises and added much to the effectiveness of all military ceremonies."

In summing up the results of the nine days of the encampment Colonel McClintock stated, "I can express only gratification over the progress made. The membership of several companies newly organized showed remarkable aptitude, while with them the older organizations grew steadier and more soldierly. Discipline was excellent. There was no drunkenness in camp and few offenders were called before the Summary Court. The spirit shown by officers and men is commended highly. On the whole, I believe the Regiment made a showing that entitles it to rank among the best of the organizations of citizen soldiery within the Union."

Under the authority of a recent Act of Congress, a battalion commanded by Major E. M. Lamson, consisting of Companies B, C, H and I took part in a general encampment near Austin, Texas. Territory of Arizona Special Order No, 12 directed that "By authority of the War Department, one battalion of infantry may take part in the camp of instruction near Austin, Texas, August 5-12, 1906."

The order specified that the battalion would rendezvous at Maricopa on the night of August 2-3, as follows:

Co. "I" (Flagstaff) will proceed by rail to Phoenix, via Ash Fork, reaching there not later than the afternoon of August 2.

Company "B" (Phoenix) will be reported to Major Lamson at such hour on August 2 as he may order.

The field and commission and non-commissioned staff and Co's "B" and "I" will leave Phoenix, at an hour to be designated later, over the M&P. & S.R.V. Railway.

Company "H" (Yuma) will proceed, by rail, to Maricopa, reporting to Major Lamson. There, the night of August 2-3.

Upon arrival in El Paso, Texas, three tourist cars containing Companies K and L of the 4<sup>th</sup> Texas were attached to the special train. At El Paso, Major Lamson telegraphed as follows: "Aug. 3, 1906. The Commanding Officer, Camp Mabry, near Austin, Texas. Enroute 188 enlisted, 16 officers, expect to arrive about midnight tomorrow. Rations and transportation to Camp requested. Lamson, Major Commanding."

Upon arrival at Camp Mabry, Major Lamson was directed to report to Lieutenant Colonel Delamater, commanding the First Texas, for instructions regarding that day's maneuvers. The First Texas was composed of eight companies, and the Arizona battalion was attached as a third battalion of that regiment. Later in the week the joint maneuvers between the National Guard and the Regular Army began. The Arizona battalion formed part of the First Brigade consisting of the First New Mexico Cavalry and the 26<sup>th</sup> U.S. Infantry commanded by Colonel Leroy Brown.

Major Lamson's final report to the Adjutant General stated, "After the last report of the Chief Empire, General McCaskey complimented the officers and men of the Arizona Battalion on their manner of making camp and performing all duties required of them. He complimented them especially upon their soldierly appearance, their ability to execute all maneuvers, under difficulties, and their compliance with all sanitary regulations of camp. After the meeting adjourned, he paid me personally a high compliment, on the efficiency of the battalion for services under all conditions, and regretted very much that we had no blank ammunition the first day of the joint maneuvers and that we were obliged to return home when the maneuvers were only half over. In conclusion, I wish to state that I consider the trip a success in every respect. It gave the officers experience in handling men on the cars, in strange towns, in a new camp, and on unknown ground. The men know exactly what to expect when ordered out for a long trip and can govern themselves accordingly."

The years of 1907 and 1908 were years for additional growth within the Arizona Guard. On August 26, 1907 Colonel Benjamin Ward Leavell, Adjutant General passed away. On August 28 Colonel James H. McClintock, commander of the First Regiment of Infantry, National Guard of Arizona, was appointed Acting Adjutant General. In 1885, during the Geronimo campaign, Colonel McClintock was an employee of the Adjutant General's Office at Whipple Barracks, Arizona. James H. McClintock graduated from the first class of Tempe Normal School in 1887. He was appointed Second Lieutenant, 1st Arizona Infantry on April 10, 1898 and Captain 1<sup>st</sup> U. S. Volunteer Cavalry on April 28, 1898. He was wounded on June 24, 1898 at Guasimas, Cuba and was returned to the United States for hospitalization and was discharged from the service in November 1898. He was appointed Colonel, First Arizona Infantry on July 14, 1902 and served

in that capacity until July 1910. Many times during the periods he was Colonel he acted as the Adjutant General of Arizona.

The Territorial encampment for 1907 was held a Camp Brodie on July 30 for a period of ten days. Final Report was short and to the point, "At this camp much open order work, skirmish, battle formation and target practice was had, which was of great value." In 1907 Arizona sent her first Rifle Team to compete in the National Rifle Match at Camp Perry, Ohio. Considering the fact that the team only had ten days to practice as a team, and shot against the best in the world, they considered themselves fortunate to rank thirty-eighth out of forty-eight teams competing.

Colonel Lewis W. Coggins was appointed Adjutant General on February 6 1908. Colonel Coggins rose through the ranks to leadership stature in the First Arizona Infantry and was first appointed Adjutant General of Arizona (Territory) in 1908 for a term that lasted more than 3 years. Governor George W. P. Hunt again appointed him Adjutant General three days after Arizona attained Statehood in 1912. Colonel Coggins was elected Assessor of Maricopa County in 1898 and served two terms as Mayor of the City of Phoenix. He is credited with originating the first Washington's Birthday Rifle Match in the early days of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century, which is still fired each year by the Arizona National Guard.

During 1908 Companies A, E, F and G were mustered into the Arizona National Guard. In addition to these new units a petition was pending for the addition of a Company in Tucson. The 1908 report to the Adjutant General listed the following organizations with a total strength of 500.

Company A	Captain E. P. Grinstead	Phoenix
Company B	Captain C. I. Stacey	Phoenix
Company C	Captain C. T. Hayden	Tempe
Company D	Captain J. B. Nelson	Mesa
Company E	Captain H. G. CoyKendall	Prescott
Company F	Captain Paul Reisinger	Clifton
Company G	Captain H. A. Hammels	Buckeye
Company H	Captain H. H. Donkersley	Yuma
Company I	Captain George Hockderffer	Flagstaff
Second Troop	Captain A. M. Tuthill	Morenci

Colonel Coggins reported that Arizona could have already complied with the provisions of the Act of Congress known as the "Dick Bill," to have a twelve-company regiment of infantry prior to January 1910 if they had been able to secure arms, clothing and equipment. With the addition of the four new companies, which were fully equipped, the appropriations for the year were exhausted.

In 1908 the Arizona Guard was armed with the new U.S. Magazine Rifle, Caliber .30, Model 1903 with the formerly used "krag" rifles, together with two Gattling guns, old .45 and .50 caliber Springfield rifles and a large quantity of obsolete ordnance and ordnance stores were returned to Rock Island Arsenal. The Olive Drab service uniform was issued to the First Arizona Infantry for the first time and was considered of great value since the khaki uniforms were not sufficiently warm for winter weather.

The 1908 Territorial encampment was held near Phoenix, at a camp named "Camp Kibbey" in honor of the Commander in Chief and Governor of the Arizona Territory. The camp commenced on September 25 for eight days and consisted largely of close order work, drill and parades. Upon conclusion of the encampment a battalion was selected from volunteers to represent Arizona at the maneuvers at Camp Atascadero, California with the "Regular Troops" and the National Guard of California. Under Command of Colonel James H. McClintock the battalion left Phoenix on October 2 and returned October 12. The maneuver was considered to be of great value to both officers and men and the Arizona battalion "received praise from all sources for its work in the field and on parade, again demonstrating its ability to do its work quickly and well,

at the same time establishing an enviable reputation for quiet, orderly conduct.” A second Arizona team was sent to Camp Perry in 1908. They succeeded in winning thirty-fifth place out of fifty teams competing. The Team report remarked, “shooting in a wind such as we are not familiar with in Arizona, against teams which had been practicing on those grounds and under the same conditions for weeks.”

For the first time, Colonel Coggins addressed the issue of armories for the Arizona National Guard. He stated, “It is customary for States and Territories to furnish Armories for their National Guard. Armories are greatly needed in Arizona, and ground for it can never be secured cheaper than at the present time. I believe it would be money well invested should the Territory construct at least one Armory each year for its Guard, its cost would hardly be felt, the public property could better be cared for, and the citizens who give their time would be greatly aided in preparing themselves for service in time of need.”

The record made by the Arizona Rifle Team at Camp Perry for the year 1910 won the 24<sup>th</sup> team position among the competitors, which placed it well up in the Class “B” team competition. The team, under command of Major Carl T. Hayden, won second prize in Class “C” Team competition, consisting of two hundred dollars in cash and a Bronze Medal for each team member.

In 1910 a revolution broke out in Mexico. Fighting between Mexican armies raged for years. Lives of Americans were endangered in the border towns of Douglas, Naco, and Nogales. There was always danger that violence in Mexico would spread to the American side of the border. In 1911, for example, bullets flew wildly into Douglas from a battle in Agua Prieta across the border. Company G, under the command of Captain W. W. Winham, stationed at Douglas, was called into service by Governor Richard E. Sloan on April 16, 1911 to assist the United States Army in patrolling the International Border between the United States and Mexico. The company responded promptly with fifty-six men reporting. The company served for three days and “the service rendered being a credit to the company as well as to the entire Guard of Arizona.”

When the Arizona Rifle Team went to the National Matches at Camp Perry, Ohio, in August of 1911, Captain Charles W. Harris, team Captain, designed a flag for the team since all the other teams participating flew their State’s Flag. Nan Hayden, wife of Carl Hayden who was a member of the team, stitched it together for the team after they arrived at Camp Perry. In 1916 the Arizona Legislature formally adopted this ensign as the flag of the State of Arizona.

On 16 March 1951, Nan Hayden while in Washington with Senator Hayden wrote a letter to Mrs. Fannie Harris, widow of Captain Charles W. Harris, Team Captain and later Adjutant General of the Arizona National Guard. “Illness has prevented me from making an earlier reply to your letter of Feb 14, but I am glad to tell you all that I know about the first Arizona State Flag. Congress had passed the bill to admit Arizona into the Union before I went to the national matches at Camp Perry, Ohio, in 1911, with Carl, who was a member of the Arizona National Guard rifle team of which your husband was the captain.”

“That will soon be 40 years ago, but I remember that your husband was quite concerned because the other states had their flags, but our team had no flag to fly over their camp. Captain Harris came to me with a design that he had drawn up, and the material to make the flag. I said that I would sew it, which I did at that time; and he raised it over the Arizona camp.”

“I was living nearby at a camp for the wives. I do not know where he obtained the material, but he had the design, which was the same as the Arizona State flag is today. I had no part except to sew it. The men were so glad to have a flag for our new State, and they shot so well in the contests, that they covered the new flag with glory.”

“This is all that I know about it. I know that it was not easy to follow your husband’s design and put the flag together.”

Through 1911 there were still minor changes occurring in the troop organization of the guard. The First Infantry Regiment still consisted of two battalions with companies A, B, C, D, F, H, K

and L, now under the command of Colonel Alexander M. Tuthill. The regiment participated in the U. S. Army Maneuvers at Atascadero, California from 15 to 30 September 1910. In April and May 1911 designated officers attended U. S. Army Maneuver Camp at San Diego, California and U. S. Army Maneuvers, San Antonio, Texas for fourteen days each.

On 1 September 1911, Colonel Edwin M. Lamson was appointed Adjutant General until 16 February 1912, when Colonel Lewis W. Coggins was re-appointed Adjutant General. Colonel Lamson first enlisted in Company B, First Arizona Infantry on September 6, 1894 and was elected Captain in August 1897. Resigned to enlist as First Sergeant in Company A, First Territorial U. S. Volunteer Infantry, commissioned Second Lieutenant October 19, 1898 and mustered out on February 15, 1899. Colonel Lamson rejoined Company B, 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry November 7, 1901 and served with the Arizona National Guard until his retirement on 17 February 1912. Colonel Lamson was the founder of Lamson's Business College, later Lamson Junior College, Phoenix, Arizona,

Lieutenant Colonel Charles W. Harris was appointed and served as Adjutant General 1912-1919 and 1923-1929. Colonel Harris enlisted as a Private in Company D, 7<sup>th</sup> U. S. Cavalry, on May 5 1898 and served in the Hospital Corps, U. S. Army until January 1900. He served as an enlisted man in the California National Guard from 1901 until 1902, then enlisted service in the Arizona National Guard 1903 until 1909. Commissioned First Lieutenant, Company C, 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry on 27 July 1909 and appointed Adjutant General on July 3, 1912. Colonel Harris served as Adjutant General until June 3, 1919 when he transferred to the Organized Reserve Corps. He was again appointed Adjutant General on January 1, 1923 and served in that capacity until January 6, 1929, he was promoted to Brigadier General on May 4, 1927. Special Orders Number 32, Military Department, State of Arizona, February 18, 1933, discharged Lieutenant Colonel Charles W. Harris, Headquarters 45<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, Arizona National Guard by reason of his imprisonment in the State Prison in accordance with the sentence of a civil court for a felony. Colonel Harris died on 4 Aug 1949, during the period just prior to his death he was a procurement officer for the Federal Works Agency in Los Angeles California.

The joint maneuver camp in 1914 was held in Garden Canyon at Fort Huachuca during the period August 5<sup>th</sup> to August 17<sup>th</sup>, with the following units attending:

- Company A, Phoenix
- Company B, Phoenix
- Company C, Tempe
- Company D, Mesa
- Company E, Tucson
- Company F, Snowflake
- Company F, Prescott
- Company G, Douglas
- Company H, Yuma
- Company I, Flagstaff
- Company K, Tucson

Attendance for the maneuver was 37 officers and 564 enlisted men. Companies L, Yuma and M, Morenci were excused from attendance. Adequate Federal Appropriations were not allotted to cover the expense of more personnel to attend.

Colonel Harris reported that the first State Armory was constructed at Tucson and was completed in September 1914. The large armory, seating twenty-two hundred people was constructed at a cost to the State of fourteen thousand dollars, the total cost of the building being twenty-eight thousand dollars, exclusive of the value of the armory site. "The armory was described as being two stories in height, above the basement, and in it is provided a fine drill hall, locker rooms, study rooms, offices, baths and indoor shooting gallery." Colonel Harris indicated that plans have been drawn for armories at Flagstaff and Yuma. Further that the plans for the Flagstaff armory would also be suitable for an armory at Douglas. Colonel Harris continued, "A State arsenal at Phoenix is an absolute necessity. We cannot have an efficient

organization without armories. The National Guardsmen receive nothing for the time they give during the year and the providing of suitable armories is the least the State can do in return for services rendered." Colonel Harris and those Adjutants Generals that succeeded him didn't do a very good job of selling this point since a number of units were still without armories when mobilized for World War II.

## **Border Service**

In 1914 Francisco "Pancho" Villa engaged Mexican Federales in battle at Naco, Sonora. During that fight every house in Naco, Arizona had some bullet holes, some homes had as many as fifty bullet holes. The Mexican situation continued to deteriorate causing the Arizona Military Department a great deal of expense. The Adjutant General reported, "Just after the United States troops landed in Vera Cruz, requests and demands for State troops came from prominent citizens and members of the Boards of Supervisors in all of the border counties and some of the central counties of the State. Had we furnished troops requested, the expense would have been over fifty thousand dollars for one month. Guards were placed over armories and the State storeroom for the only organizations called out were companies H and L of Yuma under the command of Major H. H. Donkersley. These companies were in the field from April 21<sup>st</sup> to April 27<sup>th</sup>. Guards were placed over the works of the Reclamation Service at and near Yuma. Some Mexican soldiers were found under arms near the town of Yuma and a few rifles were captured and a cache was found where great many arms had been stored on the American side of the line. Under orders from yourself, Captain M. G. Seeley and myself were sent to Naco on October 14, 1914, to make a report on the situation there. My report made to yourself (Governor) covered the situation as found. Since that time a number of citizens of Naco have been shot and some of them killed. As the United States authorities are in control of the town of Naco, nothing can be done by the State authorities and it is very probable that the War Department would immediately order the Guard into the service of the United States should you deem it advisable to order our troops to Naco. This would prevent us from taking any action not thought advisable by the authorities at Washington. The situation is one to be deplored, and it seems a remarkable condition that citizens of the United States should be shot, their homes destroyed, and they themselves driven from their homes and occupations by armed troops of a foreign country when this country is at peace with all the world."

Pancho Villa's dramatic raid into Columbus, New Mexico on 9 March 1916, killing seventeen Americans brought Active Army units. The President called up the militias of Arizona, New Mexico and Texas on May 9<sup>th</sup>, 1916. The Arizona militia was mustered in by May 19, Texas was ready by June 20, and the militia forces of New Mexico were completing their mustering in by August. Three weeks after the passage of the 1916 National Defense Act in late June, the National Guard of all of the states, except Nevada which did not have a militia, and Alaska and the District of Columbia were called into Federal service. There were as many as 111,954 guardsmen along the border at the end of August 1916.

President Woodrow Wilson sent General John J. "Black Jack" Pershing to the border and into Mexico with an army to capture Villa dead or alive. Part of that army was the 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry Regiment under Colonel A.M. Tuthill's command. The 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry Regiment had been mobilized to assist the army of General Pershing by guarding and patrolling the border between Douglas and Naco. These regulars and guardsmen remained together to become seasoned officers and men for the inevitable World War, which was declared on 6 April 1916. Colonel Tuthill was nicknamed "Dobie Al"; he made the officers build a compound of "Dobie" (adobe) bricks when they didn't get their men to do it.

The following Chronological Record of the 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry on the border comes from a mimeographed document, source unknown, found in the file of Major Albert R. Etzweiler, Chief Musician during Mexican Border service and World War I Band leader, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry Band.

### 1916

**May 9** First Arizona Infantry ordered to mobilize at Douglas, Arizona by Order of President Wilson.

**May 13** Mobilization completed at Camp Harry J. Jones, Douglas, Arizona.

**Regimental Headquarters, Morenci**  
Colonel A.M. Tuthill, Commanding  
Captain M.G. Brown, Adjutant  
Captain A.G. Taylor, Q.M. & Commissary

**1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, Phoenix**  
Major E. P. Grinstead, Commanding  
First Lieutenant Clyde Pickett, Adjutant  
Second Lieutenant Harold C. Hess, Bn Q.M.

**A Company, Phoenix**  
Captain E. J. Helsley  
First Lieutenant Harld A. Briggs  
Second Lieutenant William J. Balfour

**B Company, Safford**  
Captain E. H. Roach  
First Lieutenant E. S. Wickersham  
Second Lieutenant Clyde Ijams

**C Company, Tempe**  
Captain Edwin M. LeBarron  
First Lieutenant Wiley A. Hanson  
Second Lieutenant Romeo C. Haby

**D Company, Mesa**  
Captain Joseph E. Noble  
First Lieutenant Thomas B. Lee  
Second Lieutenant Clarence Pomeroy

**2d Battalion, Tucson**  
Major H. G. Koykendall  
First Lieutenant M. A. S. Ming, Adjutant  
Second Lieutenant Clarence N. Wakefield, Bn Q.M.

**E Company, Tucson**  
Captain Robert E. Soto  
First Lieutenant Fred G. Meyer  
Second Lieutenant P. P. Salgado

**F Company, Phoenix**  
Captain L. J. Holzwarth  
First Lieutenant Frank Smith  
Second Lieutenant Rolin W. Shaw

**G Company, Douglas**  
Captain H. H. Beck  
First Lieutenant Otto Goetz  
Second Lieutenant George E. Seeley

**H Company, Ray**  
Captain P. G. Garney  
First Lieutenant W. E. Cassell

**Second Lieutenant Jas. Conroy**

**3d Battalion, Morenci  
Major George E. Haedicke  
First Lieutenant Harry Jackson, Adjutant  
Second Lieutenant A. B. Williams, Bn Q. M.**

**I Company, Flagstaff  
Captain Edwin M. Robinson  
First Lieutenant Jack Whitwall  
Second Lieutenant Cleon Colley**

**L Company, Yuma  
Captain Frank W. Hall  
First Lieutenant H. L. Haupt  
Second Lieutenant A. J. Seeds**

**M Company, Morenci  
Captain Frank H. Hayes  
First Lieutenant Rufus Nelson  
Second Lieutenant Hugh Roundtree**

**Band, Phoenix  
A. R. Etzweiler, Chief Musician**

**Sanitary Detachment, Tucson  
Major E. E. Yount  
Captain I. E. Huffman  
First Lieutenant Greer  
First Lieutenant Morris**

- June 18** 3d Battalion under command Major George E. Haedicke ordered to Nogales, Arizona, by Order Commanding General, Arizona District. Patrol duty.
- June 19** Regiment officially mustered into Federal Service  
Supply Company organized. Captain A. C. Taylor, Second Lieutenant Harold C. Hess.  
Headquarters Company organized.  
A Company, Captain E. J. Helsley commanding ordered to relieve two Troops, 1<sup>st</sup> Cavalry at Slaughters Ranch per Orders Commanding General, Arizona District, Douglas, Arizona.  
D Company, Captain Joseph E. Noble Commanding to relieve one Troop, 1<sup>st</sup> Cavalry, Forrest Station per Orders Commanding General, Arizona District, Douglas, Arizona.
- June 27** Machine Gun Company organized. Captain Clyde Pickett, Second Lieutenant Williams, Second Lieutenant Wakefield
- July 3** 3d Battalion, Major Haedicke commanding, left Nogales. Battalion Headquarters, K and L Companies to Ajo, Arizona. I Company to Casa Grande, Arizona. Machine Gun Company to Roosevelt Dam per Orders Commanding General, Arizona District, Douglas.
- July 12** 2d Battalion, Companies E, F, G and H, Major Coykendall commanding, entrained for Fort Huachuca, Arizona, per Orders Commanding General, Arizona District, Douglas.
- July 14** Companies A and D rejoined Regiment at Douglas.
- July 15** Regimental Headquarters, Headquarters Company, 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, Supply Company and Machine Gun Company, Colonel A. M. Tuthill commanding, left Douglas for Naco, Arizona, for patrol duty per Orders Commanding General, Arizona District, Douglas. Camped at Forrest Station night of July 15.

**July 16** March to Naco resumed. Arrived Naco 12:30 P.M., camp established adjoining 1<sup>st</sup> Cavalry Post.  
**August 15** 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, Major Grinstead commanding, began practice march to Fort Huachuca. Camped overnight at Hereford.  
**August 16** Broke camp and completed march to Garden Canyon. Engaged in field maneuvers with 2d Battalion, Major Coykendall commanding. Pitched shelter tents 2:00 P.M.  
**August 17** Rested in Garden Canyon.  
**August 18** Broke camp 6:00 A.M began return march to Naco. Distance of 34 miles made in ten hours.  
**Sept 6** 2d Battalion rejoined Regiment at Naco.  
**Sept 7** 3d Battalion rejoined Regiment at Naco.  
**Sept 20** 8:00 A. M. Regiment under command of Colonel A. M. Tuthill began seven-day practice march. Pitched shelter tents for night at Hereford.  
**Sept 21** Marched to Lewis Springs.  
**Sept 22** Marched to Tombstone.  
**Sept 23** Marched to Gleason.  
**Sept 24** Marched to McNeil.  
**Sept 25** Marched to Forrest Ranch.  
**Sept 26** Arrived Naco, average day's march 17 ½ miles.  
**Dec 24** 11:00 P. M. severe sand and wind storm, camp badly damaged.  
**Dec 25** Heavy snow adds to discomfort of wrecked camp.

### 1917

**Feb 12** General Funston reviewed Regiment.  
**March 12** Muster out suspended.  
**March 28** Officers pledged to abstain from alcoholic liquors while 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry remained in Federal Service.  
**April 2** Regiment reviewed by General Pershing.  
**April 16** A Company, Captain E. J. Helsley commanding, ordered to Lowell, Arizona, per Orders Commanding General, Arizona District, Douglas.  
**May 2** B Company, Captain E. H. Roach commanding, ordered to Ajo, Arizona, for patrol duty per Orders Commanding General, Arizona District.  
**August 5** Colonel A. M. Tuthill promoted Brigadier General to command 79<sup>th</sup> Brigade, 40<sup>th</sup> Division, telegram War Department.  
**August 17** Governor Campbell reviewed Regiment and presented State Flag.  
**August 22** General Tuthill reviewed 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry as it's commanding officer for the last time. General Tuthill left for Camp Kearny. Lieutenant Colonel Donkersley assumed command.  
**Sept** General Tuthill reviewed Regiment.  
**Oct 6** Regiment ordered to report to 40<sup>th</sup> Division, Camp Kearny, California by Orders Commanding General, Southern Department, El Paso, Texas.  
**Oct 10** Entire Regiment engaged in night maneuvers on trenches west of Naco. 3d Battalion and Machine Gun Company, Major Haedicke commanding, defensive. 1<sup>st</sup> and 2d Battalion, Major Grinstead commanding, offensive.  
**Oct 12** 24<sup>th</sup> Infantry arrived Naco to relieve 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry.  
**Oct 14** A Company rejoined Regiment.  
 Designation of Regiment changed from 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry to 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry, assigned to 79<sup>th</sup> Brigade.  
**Oct 16** Entrained for Camp Kearny, California.  
**Oct 17** 1:00 A. M., B Company rejoined Regiment enroute at Gila Bend, Arizona.  
 Noon, parade at Yuma, Arizona.  
**Oct 18** Arrived Camp Kearny 6:00 P. M.  
**Dec 18** Colonel Harry D. Smith, Colorado Cavalry, assumed command per S.O. 109, Headquarters, 40<sup>th</sup> Division.

As a sidelight, service on the border against Pancho Villa furnished the opportunity for the first known use of airplanes as bombers in North America. Both the Mexican revolutionists and de

facto government forces furnished employment to numerous American mercenaries. Charles Ford took off from the vicinity of Douglas on his first bombing expedition on May 7 or 8, 1913, and safely returned the same day. His trip covered twenty-five or thirty miles to Agua Prieta. Rumors were that he damaged a piece of railroad track outside Agua Prieta and surprised the opposition. The bombs used were made from empty five-pound lard pails stuffed with dynamite, scrap metal, and rough concrete.

One of the new second lieutenants sent to the border was Omar Nelson Bradley, 14th Infantry. From September 1915 to May 1916, he was at Douglas where he lived "in absolutely miserable circumstances." He kept busy operating the target range, coaching the regimental baseball team and "participated in an epic experimental 300-mile 'motorized hike' with a convoy of trucks." He was moved to Nogales from July to September 1916, and then to Yuma from September 1916 to 21 May 1917. He said: "Duty at Yuma was miserable. Clearly there was to be no war with Mexico; the official camp duties were routine and boring, Yuma was primitive and dusty. Our major diversion was the tedious round of formal calls on superiors for tea or coffee. A few weeks after Mary and I settled in, I applied for a transfer.... Any place seemed preferable to Yuma, Arizona"

Other young officers who were to later gain prominence and who were stationed along the border were: Clarence Huebner, 2LT at Douglas, AZ, in 1912; Matthew B. Ridgway, 2LT At Eagle Pass, Texas, in 1917; Carl A. Spaatz, aviator with 1916 Pershing Expedition; Lucian K. Truscott, 2LT with 17th Cavalry at Douglas in 1917; Jonathan M. Wainwright, CPT, 1st Cavalry, in 1916; Walton H. Walker, 2LT in Texas in 1914; Terry Allen, 1LT, 1912-17; Malin Craig, aide-de-camp to General Bell in 1915. William J. "Wild Bill" Donovan, with NY National Guard during 1916 Pershing Expedition; Hugh A. Drum, aide-de camp to General Funston in 1914; George S. Patton, 8th Cavalry and aide-de-camp to General Pershing in 1916; Robert L. Eichelberger LT in 1911 with 10th Infantry and in 1915 with 22d Infantry; Leslie J. McNair, with 1916 Pershing Expedition; George C. Marshall, a 1LT in Texas Maneuver Division in 1911; Alexander McCarroll Patch, 1LT in 18th Infantry in 1910 and George E. Straterneyer, 2LT, 7th Infantry at Douglas in 1914.

## **World War I**

World War I, the great armed conflict of 1914-1918. Until 1939, and especially in England, it was often called the Great War because it was the most destructive and widespread war the world had ever seen. Although less destructive than World War II to civilian life and property, in some respects World War I was more horrible. This is partially because the world of the earlier war was less prepared for its effects and partly because of the way it was fought.

Much of World War I was a stalemated conflict of trench warfare and suicidal infantry charges against murderous machine gun and rifle crossfire. Two major new weapons, highly important in later warfare, were introduced - tanks and airplanes. A newly developed trench mortar was also put into use. Poison gas was used in this war, but its deadly effects caused a virtual ban on its use in succeeding wars. Most commonly used weapons were the older ones such as machine guns, hand grenades, and artillery.

World War I began as a local conflict over a minor issue. Eventually it engulfed much of Europe and drew in, directly or indirectly, all major powers of the world. Many people thought of World War I as "the war to end all wars", and fought to "make the world safe for democracy." Because of an unrealistic peace treaty, a weak League of Nations, a worldwide economic depression, the rise of fascism, and timid statesmen, the war had the opposite effect. It made the Second World War almost a certainty.

The 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry was called into Federal service on 9 May 1916 for service on the Mexican border, was drafted into Federal service for World War I on 5 August 1917 and was then redesignated as the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry. It was assigned to the 79<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade, to be commanded by Colonel Tuthill, of the 40<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division of the California National Guard on 5 October 1917. It served at Camp Kearney, California, near San Diego, until being sent overseas

in August 1918. In France the designation of the 40<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division was changed to the 6<sup>th</sup> Depot Division. The Depot Divisions furnished replacement personnel to other units.

The Chronological Record located in Major Albert R. Etzweiler's Military file continues from arrival of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment at Camp Kearny from Naco, Arizona.

### 1918

March 9 A. M. Governor Hunt of Arizona reviews Regiment.  
Regiment presented National Colors by Arizona Sons of American Revolution.  
P. M. Division Review

March 19 Colonel H. D. Smith's resignation accepted per telegraphic instructions A.G.O.  
Washington.

March 20 Lieutenant Colonel Donkersley transferred to 115<sup>th</sup> Ammunition Train, 40<sup>th</sup>  
Division.

March 21 Colonel H. D. Smith leaves Regiment.  
Major E. P. Grinstead assumes command.

April 11 Brigade, General A. M. Tuthill commanding, began 10 days practice march and field  
maneuvers. 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry camped at La Guna.

April 12 Marched to Del Mar.

April 13 Arrived Santa Fe Ranch. Established temporary camp.

April 14 Engaged in field maneuvers with 157<sup>th</sup> Infantry.

15,16,17

April 15 Major Grinstead promoted to Lieutenant Colonel.

April 18 Broke camp and marched to Del Mar.

April 19 Field maneuvers with 80<sup>th</sup> Brigade commanded by General Hall. 79<sup>th</sup> Brigade with  
158<sup>th</sup> Infantry declared winner. At 5:00 A. M. 79<sup>th</sup> Brigade with 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry as  
advance guard began field problem with 80<sup>th</sup> Brigade under command of General  
Hall. 79<sup>th</sup> declared winner. Arrived Camp Kearny 1:00 P. M.

May 29 Regimental Band toured State of Arizona.

June 10,11 Four officers and 1,000 men from 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry entrained Camp Kearny for port of  
embarkation for overseas service per telegraphic instructions War Department.

June 20 Lieutenant Colonel Grinstead promoted to Colonel. June and July Regiment filled  
War Strength, men from Camp Funston and American Lake.

July 21 40<sup>th</sup> Division ordered to port of embarkation for overseas duty per telegraphic  
instructions War Department dated July 21, 1918.

July 30,31 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry entrained for port of embarkation.

August 5,6 Regiment arrived Camp Mills, Long Island, N. Y.

August 7 Inspection prior to embarkation.  
Regiment Headquarters, Headquarters Company, G and H Companies boarded S. S.  
Olympic, embarked August 8 for overseas duty.

August 10 Companies E, F, and Machine Gun Company embarked S. S. Vauban.

August 11 3d Battalion embarked S. S. Port Denison.  
1<sup>st</sup> Battalion and Supply Company embarked S. S. Laomodon.

August 16 Regimental Headquarters, Headquarters Company, Companies G and H debarked  
Southampton, England, arrived Cherbourg, France, August 19.

August 22 Entrained August 22d for Nerondes. Arrived Nerondes August 24. Regimental  
Headquarters and Headquarters Company marched to Jussy, Cher, same day and  
established Regimental Headquarters. Companies G and H marched to Garigny and  
occupied billets.

August 24 2d Battalion, Companies E, F and Machine Gun Company debarked LeHavre,  
France, entrained for LaGuerche the 25<sup>th</sup> - arrived 27<sup>th</sup>. Marched to the billeting  
area same day. Companies E and F to Garigny, Company I to Jouet, Companies K  
and L to Monetou, Centure. Company M to St. Hiaire, Gondilly and Machine Gun  
Company to Precy.

August 25 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion and Supply Company debarked London. Arrived Southampton 26<sup>th</sup>,  
Havre, France 27<sup>th</sup>, arrived Jussy District August 30<sup>th</sup>. Companies A, B and Supply  
Company billeted in Jussy, Companies C and D billeted in Precy.

**August 28** 6<sup>th</sup> Depot Division established in compliance with instructions G.H.Q., A.E.F., dated August 21, 1918.  
**August 30** Officers forwarded as replacements per telegraphic instructions Commanding General, S.O.S., dated August 28.  
**Sept 8** Regimental Headquarters moved to Precy. Headquarters Company and Supply Company from Jussy to Precy. C and D Companies from Precy to Jussy.  
**Sept 10** In compliance with telegraphic instructions Commanding General, S.O.S., 500 men forwarded as replacements.  
**Sept 21** 1,000 men forwarded as replacements in compliance with telegraphic instructions Commanding General, S.O.S., dated Sept 19 1918.  
**Sept 26** A Company moved from Jussy to Chassy.  
**October 2** 231 men as replacements in compliance with telegraphic instructions Commanding General, S.O.S., dated Sept 27.  
**October 4** D and C Company from Garigny to Mornay-Berry.  
**October 8** 117 men forwarded as replacements per Order Commanding General, S.O.S.  
**October 12** F Company from Garigny to Mornay-Berry.  
**October 14** 50 men forwarded as replacements per Order Commanding General, S.O.S.  
**October 15** 52 machine gunners as replacements per Order Commanding General, S.O.S.  
**October 29** Evacuation of Jussy District by 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry, began compliance G. O. #3, Headquarters 6<sup>th</sup> Depot Division, A.E.F.  
**October 30** 4:00 A. M. Regiment entrained to Nerondes from Chelles, Seine-et-marne.  
**October 31** Arrived Chelles, Regiment began functioning as Regimental Replacement Depot relieving and absorbing 3d Corps Replacement Battalion. Regimental Headquarters established at Chelles. Supply Company, Headquarters Company, B and C stationed at Chelles. Machine Gun Company at Fort Chelles. A and K Companies Farm #2 Neisiel, M Company Farm #1. L and I Companies at Neisiel. E and F Companies at Chateau Pomponnette. G and H Companies at Pomponne.

As noted above, now under the command of Colonel E.P. Grinstead, the regiment was singularly distinguished and honored by being designated to act as the Guard of Honor for President Woodrow Wilson during his residence in France for the Paris Peace Conference and the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry Band became President Wilson's Honor Band. The regiment was mustered out of Federal service on May 3, 1919.

No further reference is found of Lieutenant Colonel H. H. Donkersley in National Guard records until General Order Number 1, Headquarters, Camp Donkersley, Fort Huachuca, Arizona, dated 14 August 1926. It reads, "The name of this camp will be "Camp Donkersley" in honor of Lt. Col. H. H. Donkersley, 115 Amunition Train, formerly Lt. Col. 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry, who died at the Embarkation Hospital, Hoboken, N. J. after return from the A.E.F. on January 21, 1919, signed Chas. W. Harris, Colonel, Commanding."

## **The Growing Years**

Colonel Harris's Tenure as Adjutant General was comic in some respects with his running battle with Governor Thomas E. Campbell. Governor George W. P. Hunt first appointed Harris Adjutant General in 1912. Somewhere along the line Harris and Thomas E. Campbell, Governor of Arizona in 1917 crossed sabers with a battle of words that eventually reached the news media. Quoted herein is a letter from Harris to the Honorable Thomas E. Campbell, dated September 21, 1918, who from the context of the letter is undoubtedly running again for the office.

"My dear Tom:

I was somewhat amused to see a recent announcement of yours in the press of the State. Same old attempt to fool "the people". In addition to "win the war", "support the President", "hate the I.W.W.", you might have added "Free the slaves", "The gold standard" and "high tariff". Why don't you run on your record. Last time you were for "Economy" with a Capital "E". Now you have taken away the "E". And I thought you were in France. Can this be the same Tom Campbell who about March 2, 1917 announced that he would raise a cavalry regiment and seek immediate service in France? An inspired article in the press stated at this time "There is not the shadow of a doubt in the minds of those close to the Governor that he will make good his offer and that in case of war Phoenix will probably be the mobilizing point for the regiment." "Close" is a relative word. I was very close, in fact I was next to you about that time and I want to explain that I had a very large doubt that you would ever make good your offer and I still have it.

Can this be the same Tom Campbell about whom the following slush appeared in the Arizona Gazette of September 20, 1917: "His broad shoulders rose and fell slowly as if moved with a deep sigh and then he spoke \* \* \* "Also sir, I want to say that I shall see to it that those whom you referred to as having avoided military duties without cause shall be brought to an accounting. \* \* \* I regret that I cannot go with you, that I can not at least have a service flag hung over my door \* \* \* I'll not say goodbye to you, nor will I be down at the depot, for I intend to go with you as far as it is possible for me to go."

Or that other statement: "were it not for the arduous duties that require my presence in the Governor's office, I would be the first to volunteer my services and be with you boys in France."

And you say that every man should work or fight. May I inquire what work you have been doing for the past nine months.

Surely you did not mean to wind up your statement with, "Let's go from here." That must have been a typographical error. You said "We're here because we're here" did you not? Well we're here, that is self evident and I do not see why you mention it unless to call people's attention to the difference between yourself and Tom Maddock.

And just what do you mean by this "I.W.W."? The I.W.W. were unknown in Arizona until after you appeared in the Governor's chair and they ceased to be a menace as soon as you left the office. Are you urging the people to elect you Governor so that you can again demonstrate your inability to handle an I.W.W. uprising, presuming from the rule of cause and effect that your election would again start anarchy in this State.

You have the honor to be the only Governor whom the President found it necessary to caution about violations of law within your State. And your reprimand was Arizona's disgrace. Do you really think that your election would now aid the President in carrying the war to a successful conclusion? Do you expect the people to believe that you are in sympathy with Woodrow Wilson, his principles and his policies?

It is a patriotic action, uninfluenced by selfish motives, that leads most men to give their time and means to the Liberty Loan Campaigns. I do not believe that many men who are candidates for the office of Governor would consider it ethical during a political campaign to advertise themselves over the State, to keep themselves before the public, as a speaker for this work while at the same time disclaiming any ulterior motives. A pretty man may most effectively advertise himself by his appearance. I must congratulate you upon your effective way of adjourning politics by your appearance at this time for the Liberty Loan Committee and advertising in your public announcement that you will not discuss politics. Your advance advertising in which you make this public announcement invites the electors attention to your candidacy in a most effective way. Certainly no one in this State, yourself excepted, has found it necessary to advise the public that they would not discuss their business during the time they were working for the committee. Most men do not consider it necessary to warn the public that they will not do things reprehensible.

If you are so patriotic now where were you in the Spanish-American War and the Philippine Insurrection? Others served in both those wars in defense of your Country and your Flag who are younger than you, just as others now serve who are much older than you. I know where you are but where were you then? For the man who is running for office on his own record of achievement, who does not try to make political capital from a service that he has never known. I have the highest respect, but the profiteer who robs the wives and children of soldiers by unfair prices has nothing on the political patrioteer who seeks to bask in the reflected glory of these same soldiers, who tries to crowd into the lime light on their achievement, who tries to reflect the deed that brave men do.

No one has questioned your loyalty, and you disgrace the State by insisting that loyalty is a political question in Arizona, The State that in this war has been so unquestionably loyal that it ranks first in practically ever war measure. The only disloyalty has been not organized but individual since you left the Governor's office. One man in this State wrote a letter to the President after war was declared, criticising (sic) the President and protesting about sending soldiers to Europe. Several men have deserted and gone to foreign countries. Some of these men were your supporters in the last campaign. Will you announce that you do not want and will not accept the support of these people or the relatives that are supporting them in their desertion? Let us hear from you on real loyalty. Will you give out the lists of these people that you will furnish you regardless of their political affiliations and denounce them as disloyal, as traitors to this Country? Since no other candidate is attempting to secure votes by appealing to patriotism, you are the logical man to do this. Your opponent leaves the people an opportunity to judge his Americanism by his actions and his record, without bidding for support for this reason. You alone raise the question and invite attention by talking about yours.

The greatest leader of the party which you would represent, Theodore Roosevelt, a great man and a great American has a motto which you might well adopt - - "Deed not words".

Yours very sincerely,  
Chas. W. Harris, The Adjutant General"

(\* Note - What started as a labor dispute between copper mining companies and their workers in Bisbee turned into vigilante action against the allegedly nefarious activities of the Industrial Workers of the World (I.W.W.). On 12 July 1917 the vigilantes rounded up over 1,000 men, many of whom were not strikers -- or even miners -- and marched them two miles to the Warren Ballpark. There they were surrounded by armed Loyalty Leaguers and urged to quit the strike. Anyone willing to put on a white armband was released. At 11:00 a. m. a train arrived, and 1,186 men were loaded aboard boxcars inches deep in manure. Also boarding were 186 armed guards; a machine gun was mounted on the top of the train. The train traveled from Bisbee to Columbus, New Mexico, where it was turned back because there were no accommodations for so many men. On its return trip the train stopped at Hermanas, New Mexico, where the men were abandoned. A later train brought water and food rations, but the men were left without shelter until July 14th when U. S. troops arrived. The troops escorted the men to facilities in Columbus. Many were detained for several months - see The Bisbee Deportation of 1917, University of Arizona Library).

Verbal remarks over this letter to the Honorable Thomas E. Campbell continued concerning who should be serving their country and was concluded with this final letter from Harris, dated October 3, 1918, or at least the last letter of record.

"My Dear Tom:

I must conclude from your remarks made during your recent speech at the Y.M.C.A., that you did not kindly receive my letter to you written under date of September 21. Since you have not had the courtesy to answer I must conclude that speech to be your answer. Well, Tom, you answered - - - NOTHING. I regret your loss of equanimity which in your case I find is not conducive to veracity. You know and I know that practically every statement that you made about myself was not true. I regret this the more because it leads me to believe that the statement you made about entering the service if you are not elected has the same basis in truth as had your

statements about myself and your previous statements of 1917 which you have evidently considered "mere scraps of policy." \* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*In reply to the above letter I was notified that because I was United States Property and Disbursing Officer that I could not be relieved from duty with the State, and that under the law no Reserve Officer could be appointed to relieve me. \* \* \* \* \*

\* \* \* \* \*In view of the above do you not consider that your remark that "he says he's going to war but he's not", savors just a little of the charlaton (sic)?

Although I am younger than you, I have served my Country in two wars and under fire. I have a small bronze medal with a bit of ribbon attached on which is the inscription "The United States of America, For Service." You might have had one of these medals had you rendered our Country the service that I have rendered, but perhaps you would not attach the value to this bit of bronze that I do. It is so much easier to stay at home and learn the political game than it is to risk your life in the field, the plaudits of friends at home, can be had without risk that attaches to a soldier's life, and the soldier has been trained to detect camouflage.

But one thing that you said requires definite answer. You said that I had "stabbed you in the back." Your dizzy revolutions on public questions were so constant that it would take a greater acrobat than I to reach your back. Now you have had your say. I propose that you submit to a committee of three gentlemen, members of your own party, any and all evidence that you have that I ever "stabbed you in the back", and if these men, after allowing me to appear before them in my own behalf (you see I do not wholly (sic) trust your probity) decide that there was any truth in your statement I will pay to the Red Cross One Hundred (\$100.00) Dollars. Any of the following men will be satisfactory to me as a committee: Jos. E. Kibbey, L.W. Coggins, Geo. U. Young, J.L.B. Alexander and Jas. H. McClintock.

Now, Tom, no evasion on this. Either you make an effort to prove your statement and benefit the Red Cross or you acknowledge by refusal to be what I well know you to be. I did try while you were in office, on various occasions, to get you to take a definite stand in favor of the enforcement of law. This I discussed with no one but yourself but my every effort to get you to play that part of a man, I am sorry to say was unavailing.

I would be more than pleased to know that you have ever made any effort to carry out your promises of 1917 and enter the service. I wait with patience any proof that you have to submit to the people of Arizona that you have made any kind of effort to enter the service and keep your word given to our boys "over there". Having failed to keep your promises to the "boys" how can anyone know that you will keep any promises made to those left behind?

Cleopatra, weak, vacillating, ambitious and vicious suffered from the fatal gift of beauty. When the November election has passed and you can again return to the old homestead, hang the large sombrero on the door and ponder. The dream will have passed - - - the dream of the closed door to the Governor's office, of the bowing multitudes, of those who would have lauded your greatness, of the opportunity to flit lightly from question to question, and you will be face to face with your latest promise to again enter the service. For you no cry of "Ave Caesar, morituri te salutamus." The golden dream will have vanished and in that color the words can never be written "I too have served."

Yours very sincerely,  
CHAS. W. HARRIS,  
THE ADJUTANT GENERAL"

It is evident that the Campbell was again elected to the Governor's office. The following letter was sent to Chas. W. Harris from the Executive Office, State of Arizona, May 5, 1919

"Subject: Personnel Changes.

1. This communication is to inform you that your services as Adjutant General or otherwise with the State of Arizona have terminated.
2. You are directed to turn over any and all property, including books and papers, in your possession or under your control belonging or issued to the State of Arizona, to Sergeant E. A. Fern, who is hereby authorized to take, receive and hold the same, subject to my further orders.
3. Sergeant E. A. Fern is hereby authorized to enforce the above orders.

Signed Thomas E. Campbell  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief of the Military Forces of Arizona”

Lieutenant Colonel Walter S. Ingalls was appointed Adjutant General on 13 June 1919. Colonel Ingalls enlisted as a Private in Company H, 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry on 1 August 1892; he served with the 23d Infantry, U. S. Army in the Philippines, Spanish American War. He returned to the 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry 14 August 1899 and commissioned First Lieutenant 15 December 1902 to 27 February 1903. He served as Sergeant, 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry 23 February 1916 to 18 June 1916 (In Federal Service 9 May to 18 June 1916), commissioned Second Lieutenant, 19 June 1916, Federal Service with the 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry and 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment on the Mexican Border and World War I. While a Captain with the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry in France at the conclusion of World War I, he commanded the Honor Guard, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry, detailed to the escort and security of President Woodrow Wilson at the Paris Peace Conference.

His tour of duty as Adjutant General of Arizona was an active and productive one. During the period 1919 until his retirement on 31 December 1922, the National Guard of Arizona was reactivated after World War I and he was most active in reorganization of the National Guard. He was greatly instrumental in obtaining construction of State Armory facilities with one in Mesa for the field artillery and one in Phoenix for the three Infantry units located in that city. An extract from the Quarterly Report of Lieutenant Colonel H. A. Hanigan, Infantry, Instructor A.N.G., regarding the effort to obtain the property deeds and legislative funding for these armories stated, “The Adjutant General, Colonel Walter S. Ingalls, deserves much credit for his efforts. An officer with less interest in the National Guard would long ago have given up the fight.”

Reorganization after World War I found the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry assigned to the 45<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, Oklahoma National Guard. and in 1929 Arizona’s 9<sup>th</sup> Legislature appropriated \$60,000 to build Fort Tuthill south of Flagstaff as a “so-called” permanent training camp for the Arizona National Guard. This permanency was short-lived, however, for the long range tanks, artillery, recoilless rifles, mortars, rocket launchers, and other weaponry acquired after World War II simply outreached all boundaries of the tiny Fort Tuthill Military Reservation. With the organization of Battery A, 1st Field Artillery, Ingalls proceeded on March 16, 1920 from Phoenix to Flagstaff, Arizona, for the purpose of organizing a battery of Field Artillery at that place. Battery A, 1st Field Artillery Regiment, Flagstaff, Arizona, was activated and Federally Recognized 26 May 1920.

The application for the formation of a battery of field artillery at Mesa, Arizona was approved. The Adjutant General proceeded on December 3, 1920 from Phoenix to Mesa, Arizona, for the purpose of completing the organization, and to hold an election of officers, one captain, two first lieutenants, and one second lieutenant. Battery B, 1st Field Artillery Regiment, Mesa, Arizona, was activated and Federally Recognized 24 March 1921. Batteries A and B, 1st Field Artillery Regiment were ordered to attend Field Training encampment, 21 August to 6 September 1921, at Fort Bliss, Texas.

Battery A, 1st Field Artillery Regiment, Flagstaff, Arizona, was redesignated as Battery D, 158th Field Artillery Regiment (75-mm Horse Drawn), Flagstaff, Arizona, 19 October 1921. Battery B, 1st Field Artillery Regiment, Mesa, Arizona was redesignated as Battery E, 158th Field Artillery Regiment (75-mm Horse Drawn), October 19, 1921.

Battery E, 158th Field Artillery (75-mm Horse Drawn), was organized at Mesa, Arizona, on 19 October 1921, having been redesignated that date from Battery B, 1st Field Artillery Regiment, Mesa, Arizona.

158th Field Artillery, 70th Field Artillery Brigade, 45<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, shows the lineage of the following organic units.

- (1) Battery A, 158th Field Artillery (75-mm Horse Drawn) was Federally Recognized at Roswell, New Mexico, 27 June 1921.
- (2) Battery B, 158th Field Artillery (75-mm Horse Drawn) was Federally Recognized at Denver, Colorado, 17 February 1922
- (3) Battery C, 158th Field Artillery (75-mm Horse Drawn) was Federally Recognized at Pueblo, Colorado, 15 June 1921.
- (4) Battery D, 158th Field Artillery (75-mm Horse Drawn) was Federally Recognized at Flagstaff, Arizona, 26 May 1920.
- (5) Battery E, 158th Field Artillery (75-mm Horse Drawn) was Federally Recognized at Mesa, Arizona, 24 March 1921.

From the above it is apparent that the two Arizona Batteries were the first organized of the 158th Field Artillery Regiment, inheriting date of federal Recognition respectively from Batteries A and B of the 1st Field Artillery Regiment, National Guard of Arizona.

Battery D, 158th Field Artillery (75-mm Horse Drawn), was organized at Flagstaff, Arizona, on 19 October 1921, having been redesignated that date from Battery A, 1st Field Artillery Regiment, Flagstaff, Arizona. The 30 horses and the Artillery material at Flagstaff, Arizona, were shipped to Battery D, 158th Field Artillery, Weatherford, Oklahoma. Battery D, 158th Field Artillery (75-mm Horse Drawn), was Federally Recognized at Weatherford, Oklahoma, on 2 June 1924.

George W. P. Hunt was elected Governor again in 1923 (the third of four separate terms elected to this office) and re-appointed Charles W. Harris Adjutant General until 1929. Brigadier General Harris reported in his Annual Report of 1928 that the strength of the National Guard of Arizona on December 1, 1927, was 63 officers, one warrant officer and 882 enlisted men for an aggregate strength of 946 with the current strength on December 11, 1928, of 60 officers, one warrant officer and 860 enlisted men for a total of 921.

He wrote that, "the National Guard of Arizona was in the best condition that it has ever been as to training and esprit de corps. The units had received the best inspection reports from regular inspectors that had ever been received. Seven units were rated Very Satisfactory and the other nine units as Satisfactory with no deficiencies noted in either A or B Class."

General Harris further reported, "There continues to be a lack of proper facilities due to the failure of the legislature to make appropriations for the construction of armories. I shall have to report to the Legislature this year a loss of \$10,785.76 worth of federal property, for which the federal government is requesting refund. \* \* \* This total loss shown dates from 1921, and is accumulative since that date."

"A Great deal of the property kept in company armories should be kept in a state arsenal and in this way a great deal of this loss would be avoided. I have consistently recommended the construction of a state arsenal, which is an absolute necessity. I have had to beg places to store our motor transportation. The National Guard is a going business with 900 men and property worth nearly \$400,000.00. My records show that exclusive of the cost of instructors and inspectors the federal government spent \$113,492.75 on the National Guard of Arizona last year. The amount to be spent next year will be about \$250,000.00. Surely the State of Arizona can afford to properly house a business of this kind that brings this revenue to the State."

Governor George W. P. Hunt appointed Major Leonard M. Cowley Adjutant General on 7 January 1929. Cowley enlisted in the Nebraska National Guard in June 1921 until 30 May 1922. He was

appointed First Lieutenant, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry on 27 June 1923 and served with the Arizona National Guard until 7 July 1937. He was called to Active Duty and served with the Selective Service from 23 September 1940 until 19 April 1941.

Governor John C. Phillips appointed Colonel Joseph F. Pomeroy Adjutant General in 1929. Pomeroy first joined the Arizona National Guard as First Lieutenant Field Artillery, Battery B, 158<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery in 1921 and later rose to Command the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry. Pomeroy was reassigned to Commander of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry upon appointment of General Oscar F. Temple as the Adjutant General. Although Colonel Pomeroy commanded the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry prior to his appointment as Adjutant General, performance of duties, conflict of policies or simple politics, caused his resignation and reassignment to the National Guard Reserve. Governor George W. P. Hunt forwarded a letter to Pomeroy on April 28, 1932. The letter stated, "I had a conference in my office attended by Alexander M. Tuthill, Brig. Gen. 89<sup>th</sup> Brig. Commanding, and Oscar F. Temple, Adjutant General of Arizona. In view of the efficiency report rendered by Brig. Gen. Tuthill to me, I think it would be advisable for you to tender your resignation, or otherwise, in view of this efficiency report, I will have to place you on the unassigned list."

Official correspondence between the office of the Adjutant General and the Commanding General, Eighth Corps Area, Fort Sam Houston, Texas, did indicate that Pomeroy was "a politician of a different faith from that of the Governor and is an avowed candidate for a State office this fall, and the Governor believed that were he to place him on the unassigned list with a view to the withdrawal of his federal recognition he would immediately try to pose as a political martyr." This did not occur and although the true cause or reasons are unknown since the referenced Efficiency Report is not on file. Pomeroy respectfully recognized the authority of the Governor and requested transfer to the National Guard Reserve, effective May 15, 1932. Although it might not be significant, it should be noted that George W. P. Hunt was also Governor in 1928, prior to Pomeroy's appointment to Adjutant General by Governor Phillips. A World War I Lieutenant, J. Prugh Herndon was selected to become Colonel, commanding the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry in 1932.

Battery E, 158<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery (75-mm Horse Drawn) was converted to and Federally Recognized as Battery E, 158<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery (75-mm Truck Drawn), with station still at Mesa, Arizona effective 1 July 1933.

Brigadier General Oscar F. Temple became Adjutant General on March 4, 1931, and died in office February 4, 1936. Temple had half a century of military experience; most of which was gained in the Southwest. He was the fifth man to hold this position since the Baby State of Arizona became a full-fledged member of the Union. Temple enlisted in the regular Army at Fort Porter, New York in 1882. He was induced to join the army by a young man who had walked across the entire state of New York for that purpose, a young man who later secured a commission and who, during World War I, held the rank of Major General. Acquaintances throughout the regular Army were numerous, the Surgeon General of the Army, Major General Ireland, knew Temple back in the Philippines. That was when the Surgeon General was a Major and Temple was then a hospital steward.

From the time of the Geronimo campaigns in the 1880's, the United States had taken part in no major campaigns without Temple finding some way to participate also. During the Spanish American War he accompanied the First Volunteer Cavalry when that organization drove the Spaniards from San Juan Hill. He accompanied the United States Army to the Philippines, participated in the China Relief Expedition, in the Cuban Occupation and in World War I.

Retiring from the Army in 1909, General Temple, then a sergeant, came to Arizona. In 1912 when Arizona became a state, Temple was commissioned a Captain in the Arizona Guard and was made the State's first Quartermaster. When trouble broke out along the Mexican Border in 1916 he offered his services. Due to the fact that he was retired he was not accepted. However, he took three months to turn over the property in his care to the 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry and therefore had an opportunity to take some part in the Regiment's duties on the border. When the World War broke out, a wire to the Surgeon General secured Temple the rank of First Lieutenant in the

Sanitation Corps. His activities were closely affiliated with hospital work in the Southwest until he was medically discharged in the spring of 1918.

Since his second retirement, Temple was almost continuously employed in a civilian capacity in the office of the Adjutant General. His vacation period each summer was spent, at his request, with the Arizona National Guard in its training camp. Exclusive of his Foreign Service, Temple's life was spent chiefly in the Southwest. During his career he served at more than twenty regular Army posts in various parts of the United States, his longest service in any one place being at Fort Riley, Kansas. For a period of three years he was hospital steward at West Point, during this assignment he became acquainted with a host of cadets who later in life attained high posts in the Army. It was during his service as Adjutant General in 1934 that the Colorado River dispute occurred when Governor Moeur ordered the National Guard to stop the Metropolitan Water District of California from building Parker Dam on the Colorado River.

It was also during his tenure that the Twelfth Legislature, Arizona House of Representatives introduced and passed House Joint Resolution 2, January 29, 1935, on Major-General Alexander Mackenzie Tuthill. This Joint Resolution reads as follows:

"Whereas, Alexander Mackenzie Tuthill was, on the 15<sup>th</sup> day of September, 1933, appointed by the President of the United States of America a Major-General in the National Guard of the United States, upon the joint recommendation of the Governors of the respective states of Oklahoma, Colorado, New Mexico and Arizona, and thereafter assigned to the command of the Forty-fifth Division of the National Guard of the United States, which said Division is composed of National Guard units stationed in the states above named, and

Whereas, upon the 22<sup>nd</sup> day of September, 1935, Major-General Alexander Mackenzie Tuthill will have reached the age of retirement fixed by Congress for officers of the Army of the United States, and

Whereas, Major-General Alexander Mackenzie Tuthill has been a citizen of the State of Arizona since the year 1898, and will, upon the date of his retirement, have been a member of the National Guard of Arizona for a period of twenty-two years, three months and fifteen days, and

Whereas, has respectively held the rank of Captain of Troop "B", Arizona National Guard Cavalry, and thereafter Colonel of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry of the Arizona National Guard, being stationed on the Border during the period of unrest on the Border in 1915 and 1916, and upon the outbreak of the World War was appointed Brigadier-General of the 79<sup>th</sup> Brigade, consisting of the Arizona and Colorado National Guard regiments, and served during the entire World War as Brigadier-General in command of said brigade, the only citizen of Arizona to be so honored and retired to private life at the end of the World War, and resumed command of the same troops as Brigadier-General in command of the 89<sup>th</sup> Brigade in the year 1928, remaining in that rank until September 15, 1933, when he was elevated to the rank of Major-General, as set forth above, and

Whereas, he is the first and only Arizona National Guardsman to obtain the highest peace-time rank in the National Guard of the United States, to-wit, that of Major-General in command of a Division, and

Whereas he has performed duties beneficial to this state in his civilian capacity also, viz, as a members of the Constitutional Convention which resulted in the statehood of Arizona and later as Superintendent of Public Health during the years 1921 to 1923; now, therefore

Be it resolved by the Twelfth Legislature of the State of Arizona:

1. That the long years of service in the military department of the State of Arizona, the high rank attained, and the self-sacrificing zeal for the public welfare, of Major-General Alexander Mackenzie Tuthill have won the heartfelt appreciation and gratitude of the people of the State of Arizona.

2. That the Legislature, in regular session assembled, as the representatives of the people of the State of Arizona, does hereby express to Major-General Alexander Mackenzie Tuthill the heartfelt appreciation and gratitude of the people of this State for his many years of untiring service to the state, both in his military and civilian capacities.
3. That the Adjutant General of the State of Arizona be, and is hereby authorized to have struck a suitable medal and service bar, designed and approved by the General Staff of the Arizona National Guard, to be known as "State of Arizona Medal of Honor," and to present said medal to Major-General Alexander Mackenzie Tuthill with appropriate ceremonies during the 1935 training period of the Arizona National Guard as a testimonial of the appreciation of the people of the state of Arizona, as set forth herein."

General Tuthill was appointed Adjutant General upon the death of Brigadier General Oscar F. Temple on February 5, 1936, to serve with distinction until June 25, 1952. Paychecks were small in those days and General Tuthill's 31 December 1940 Notice of Appointment from Governor Sidney P. Osborn indicated that his salary would be \$3,600.00 per year. Things didn't improve much during the following years with the annual salary of the Adjutant General in the late 1960s still a meager \$9,600.00.

All of these early officers burned with ambition to perfect the appearance, training, administration, leadership and effectiveness of the Arizona National Guard. Leading the outfit toward World War II in a better condition than they had ever previously known. Peacetime service between wars was interesting for the members', to many, being a guardsman was a hobby, a diversion from their daily civilian pursuits. Weekly assemblies for training were accompanied by two weeks in camp annually, plus Sundays on local rifle ranges to qualify with a rifle and other weapons, and also, special weekend troop schools for officers. Besides, Federal quarterly drill paychecks and summer camp pay helped out tremendously with car payments and other expenses.

For reasons unknown since everyone involved is no longer with us, the initial Adjutant General Report submitted by Major General Alexander M. Tuthill covered the entire period February 4, 1936 to December 30, 1945. In reviewing and analyzing the report, it's typing errors, etc. one might not wonder if he didn't also type it himself. A major portion of the report covered the mobilization and World War II highlights of the Arizona National Guard, including a roster of all officers mobilized with the guard in 1940. The report highlighted the fact that during the war more than 250 enlisted men from the Arizona National Guard were commissioned as officers through officer training schools (OCS) or direct commissions. Further, that the average lieutenant at induction was discharged as a field grade officer with twelve reaching the grade of full colonel. This period of history will be covered later herein.

General Tuthill primarily addressed the funding and construction program within the Arizona National Guard during this period. He stated, "Appropriated funds have, in the main, been adequate with the exception of funds provided for construction of armories, but strict economy has been necessary and has been practiced. During this period two state owned buildings have been finished. The Prescott Armory built on a WPA grant was finished in 1940 and cost approximately \$186,000.00 of which the state furnished about \$15,000 \* \* \*. The Headquarters building located at 747 West Van Buren Street was also finished in 1940 by a WPA project and cost about \$30,000.00 of which the state furnished about \$14,000.00 \* \* \*. There has also been considerable money expended on improvement of the state arsenal and the camp at Flagstaff. These contributions have averaged more than \$175,000.00 annually, which for the five year period have amounted to about \$900,000.00. This has all been spent within the state. The state owns 9 armories and is required to house 23 separate units, from which it is obvious that more state owned armories are needed to house the remaining units." The new Guard Headquarters on West Van Buren Street was necessary since the original headquarters burned in December 1937 and was relocated to the State Capital building. Many of the records were destroyed by the fire or scorched beyond use and as always the case, no record is available of those records lost or destroyed.

It was during these years prior to the United States entry into World War II that Hitler's Nazi Swastika insignia created a major conflict with the Indian Swastika worn as the shoulder insignia of the 45<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division. The U.S. Army remained with the Indian heritage of the insignia by adopting the new shoulder patch to the present day Thunderbird. Hitler's adoption of the swastika as the Nazi insignia could never be explained since the swastika has been a peace symbol dating back centuries.

Upon mobilization of the Arizona National Guard in 1940 the organizations and strength were reported as follows:

UNIT	OFFICER	ENLISTED	LOCATION
State Hq	7	18	Phoenix
Hq, 89 <sup>th</sup> Brigade	2	42	Chandler
Btry E, 158 <sup>th</sup> FA	4	110	Mesa
Hq, 2d Bn, 120 QM Regt	2		Phoenix
Co D, 120 QM Regt	6	53	Phoenix
Hq, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry	7		Phoenix
Hq Co, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	5	123	Phoenix
Service Co	6	66	Phoenix
Band	1(WO)	26	Phoenix
Medical Det	4	29	Tucson
Hq Det, 1 <sup>st</sup> Bn, 158 Inf	2	11	Tempe
Co A, 158 Inf	4	77	Nogales
Co B, 158 Inf	5	79	Mesa
Co C, 158 Inf	4	65	Douglas
Co D, 158 Inf	5	83	Casa Grande
Hq Det, 2d Bn, 158 Inf	3	11	Tucson
Co E, 158 Inf	4	112	Tucson
Co F, 158 Inf	3	74	Phoenix Indian School
Co G, 158 Inf	4	76	Safford
Co H, 158 Inf	8	84	Tucson
Hq Det, 3d Bn, 158 Inf	3	11	Phoenix
Co I, 158 Inf	5	79	Flagstaff
Co K, 158 Inf	7	79	Phoenix
Co L, 158 Inf	4	80	Yuma
Co M, 158 Inf	4	78	Prescott
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>108</b>	<b>1 WO</b>	<b>1466</b>

## World War II

Arizona's 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry's finest hour was the regiment's service in World War II. It was an hour that lasted five and one half years. The 158<sup>th</sup> joined its parent organization, the 45<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, for the Louisiana Maneuvers in the summer of 1940, and the companies returned to their home communities late in August from the war games. With only two weeks to settle personal affairs, the National Guard of Arizona was ordered into Federal service for one year by President Franklin D. Roosevelt on September 16, 1940. Companies reported to their armories, were armed and equipped, and recruited toward full strength. Fort Sill, Oklahoma, was the first stop on the route of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry. There, as part of the 45<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, which was destined for the toughest fighting in the European theater, the men fought a two-front war, they went through a strenuous training program designed to make over a loose organization of civilians into a closely knit fighting organization, and they started a job that they later did in a dozen different sections of the world, they built a camp. Fort Sill was scheduled be a great training center for the army of selectees that was soon to start pouring in and the 158<sup>th</sup> did the spadework that they later performed all over the Pacific.

In February 1941, a well-disciplined organization of physically fit young men shook the dust of Oklahoma off their feet for the windswept hills of Camp Barkeley, Texas, for more training and more camp-building. The movement of the Division was one master movement of troops with all their equipment all at one time from Sill to Barkeley with two huge convoys moving on separate parallel routes. Most of the motor transport of the Eighth Corps Area was assembled for this movement that was the largest single motor movement in the military history of the world up to that time. After maneuvers at Camp Barkeley, in Louisiana and at Camp Bowie, the regiment was tough, ready for whatever was to come – and the men hoped that it was a trip back home. But a trip home wasn't on the agenda. On December 7, 1941, for the first time in 125 years American soil was attacked by a foreign power. People everywhere were shocked from the complacency by the attack of the Japanese on Pearl Harbor. The war that everyone had feared and hoped would not be was on.

## **Panama**

Triangulated out of the 45<sup>th</sup> Division, elements of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry shipped from the New Orleans port of embarkation on December 31, 1941, for the Panama Canal – vital and vulnerable artery in America's defense system. As part of the Panama Mobile Force, the men of the regiment encamped at Chorrera, north of the Canal Zone in the Republic of Panama. Here they built their next camp on the list that included three more before they left the thick jungles of Panama. They became acquainted with the beauty and filth of picturesque Panama City, the orderly symmetry of Balboa, the squalor of Colon.

Battery E, 158th Field Artillery (75-mm Truck Drawn), was relieved from the 45th Infantry Division following its recognition as a triangular division December 1941. Battery E, 158th Field Artillery, accompanied the 158th Regimental Combat Team from Camp Barkeley, Texas, to the Panama Canal Zone, arriving on 4 January 1942.

Battery E was relieved from support of the 158th Regimental Combat Team shortly after arrival in Panama Canal Zone, the date and circumstances unknown. Battery E, 158th Field Artillery, 45th Infantry Division, was redesignated as Battery B, 207th Field Artillery Battalion, (Panama Canal Department) 22 February 1942. Battery B, 207<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion (75-mm Truck Drawn), transferred from Canal Zone to Fort Ord, California, assigned to Army Ground Forces, and further assigned to II Armored Corps upon arrival at Fort Ord. II Armored Corps was redesignated as XVIII Corps 9 October 1943.

Meanwhile the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry became acquainted, too, with the black palm and the Bushmaster snake, which later gave its name to the organization. Out of a slippery mass of bush they carved out Camp Pina; for week on end they were soaked in the daylong rains in the jungles that were better suited for the mosquito and iguana than they were for men. The machete which raised calluses on their hands, and the bushmaster, the dreaded snake of the jungle, were so familiar to them that they became the shoulder insignia that was to be worn all the way to Japan and beyond.

From Brigadier General Jesse C. Drain, Commander of the Atlantic Defense Sector came a commendation for the work of planning and mapping the Pina defenses, installing bunker and gun defenses, and stringing hundreds of yards of barbed wire. At Camp Pacora the regiment was given the task of constructing outposts opposite the town and, in the building of one of these outposts, it was necessary for the men to carry the lumber board by board five miles through waist-deep swamps. It was in the Canal Zone that the Bushmasters lost their only engagement. Though they blowtorched their beds and rested them in dishes of kerosene, they were never able to win the battle against the hoards of bed bugs at Fort Clayton.

Recruits were coming in now, raw selectees rushed from the draft boards in the States to their assignments with the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry. They came from Massachusetts and Minnesota, from Alabama up to Vermont, from coalmines and wheat fields and offices. In Panama the 158<sup>th</sup>

Infantry ceased to be exclusively an Arizona outfit, it became a unit of rough young Americans from every state and every occupation and every field.

The mission of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry as part of the Panama Mobile Force was to assist in the outer defenses of the Canal. The Panama Security Force was charged with the actual defense of the Canal Zone itself, so the Mobile Force concerned itself with patrols into the Republic of Panama, sometimes going as far as Guatemala, Columbia and Ecuador. Among other assignments, it assisted in the difficult task of hunting down enemy nationals – German, Italian and Japanese – who had managed to locate themselves in positions strategically important and dangerous to the defense of the vital connecting-link between the Atlantic and Pacific. In one case a network of enemy short-wave radio stations was discovered and liquidated before it could be used for its obvious purpose. In their spare time, the men were used as guinea pigs for the testing of new clothing and equipment being developed by Quartermaster for use in jungle warfare, including the modification and testing of the Remington .03 “Bushmaster” rifle. The Bushmasters of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry gave jungle boots of half dozen varieties, hammocks, packs, rations, a hundred other items, which had been proposed for the use of troops fighting under jungle conditions, their initial tests. In the not-too-far distant future these same men would be using in jungle combat some of the equipment they had tested in the rain and mud of Central America.

## **Down Under**

When movement bogged down for a time in New Guinea, General Douglas MacArthur personally requested that the Bushmasters be sent to the Southwest Pacific Theater. The regiment, on January 6, 1943, one year of overseas service finished, together with the 98<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion, a mule-pack outfit, formed into a special jungle combat team and left Panama. Confident that they were destined for one of the lonely islands in the Pacific, the troops were surprised, late in January, to see Brisbane, Australia, looming on the horizon. Brisbane in 1943, Brisbane at any time, was a paradise for American troops. Even though their three-week stay speeded by, the men had an opportunity to enjoy the welcome of the democratic Australian people. While the outfit re-equipped, the men enjoyed the coolness of Tooth’s Lager and Aussie combination of steak and eggs, the potent Corio Special, the inevitable leg of lamb with mint jelly, and the hospitality of the Australians themselves. The girls were a pleasant contrast to the Latins of Panama, and here the Yank found the nearest thing to home that they had seen since Fort Sill in 1941.

Port Moresby, after three weeks of Brisbane was unquestionably a letdown. Kept busy with the problem of coastal defenses at the time when a Japanese attack was considered imminent, the men still found time to rehash their stay in Brisbane, hashing and rehashing until now it has become legendary. Here the Bushmasters constructed Camp Carlew, one more on the rapidly growing list. Under the leadership of General Walter Krueger, the Sixth Army, which was later to win fame in island warfare, was formed with the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment as its first combat troops. It was not the Regiment’s first experience with the outstanding commander and tactician. It had participated in Krueger’s victory when the fast moving Third Army had soundly trounced General Ben Lear’s Second Army in the 1941 Louisiana maneuvers.

Destined originally for Wau, the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry found itself in Milne Bay preparing for an offensive. To idle away the hours, the men were put to work turning the New Guinea mud into another camp which was later to become one of the biggest installations in the Pacific. The infantrymen received training on new landing craft that had not yet been tried in combat, craft like LCI’s, LST’s and LVT’s. The 2d Battalion, under command of Lieutenant Colonel Frederick R. Stofft of Tucson, went to Goodenough Island, where it was detailed as security for Sixth Army headquarters. The remaining two battalions, together with regimental headquarters, made an unopposed landing on nearby Kiriwina Island – the first landing operation of the war to be made using the new landing craft. Here they constructed an airstrip and received additional training in amphibious operations.

The 2d Battalion, in January 1944, gained the distinction of being the first element of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry to engage in combat with the enemy. Early in December the 112<sup>th</sup> Cavalry, then at

Goodenough Island under command of Brigadier General Julian C. Cunningham was alerted to make and assault landing at Arawe, Cape Merku Peninsula in the middle of New Britain Island. The mission of the 112<sup>th</sup> Cavalry was to gain a base on New Britain Island, to neutralize the strong bases of Rabaul and Gasmata, and to break the backbone of the New Britain barge bases that were still supplying the Japanese on New Guinea and Dutch New Guinea. The landing was to precede by three weeks the landing of the First Marine Division at Cape Gloucester.

The Texas Cavalrymen made a successful landing on Arawe on December 15, 1943 and spent the next tough fifteen days securing the three mile-long Cape Merkus Peninsula, establishing their base, and building up a jump-off line along the north end of the peninsula. The 112<sup>th</sup> Cavalry, being worn down by the rigors of the tough campaign of assaulting and organizing Cape Merkus, and in need of relief, the 2d Battalion under Colonel Stofft was ordered to proceed to Arawe to continue the attack.

On the 24<sup>th</sup> of December, Company G embarked from Goodenough Island on the Koondooloo, a slow moving Sydney Harbor Ferryboat and landed in Finschafen on the evening of 26 December. Three fast PT boats took the company under command of Captain Orville A. Cochran into Arawe on a speedy three-hour trip from Finschafen. G Company, on arrival at the peninsula, joined the 112<sup>th</sup> Cavalry and was assigned a defense sector on the south beach of the peninsula. Before the week was over the company had brought down a Japanese Zero with a .50 caliber machine gun. Early in January 1944, the rest of the 2d Battalion landed on Arawe and went to work patrolling for the attack that was soon to be launched.

January 6, 1944, was an eventful day, for on that day the 2d Battalion tasted the first combat for the Bushmasters. After a day's brisk fighting, 200 yards were wrenched from the heavily jungle-entrenched Japanese at the north end of the peninsula. For the next ten days the 2d Battalion went out patrols and, on January 16, launched the attack that broke the Japanese defense at Cape Merkus. Using a company of light tanks from the 1<sup>st</sup> Marine Division as a mechanized screen, the 2d Battalion attacked with Companies F and G abreast on a line. Colonel Stofft's plan was to jump off the line of departure at 0900 hours for an objective 1200 yards ahead. By 1100 hours G Company had overrun over 20 Japanese pillboxes and had reached their objective. But Company F on the right flank ran into serious difficulties, in the F Company sector the Japanese were aligned in bunkers around the rim of a deep basin that extended nearly all the way across their sector. Several times the Japanese were driven out of their coral "rat holes" by grenade and mortar fires and several times the enemy returned to lay a deadly machine gun fire in the path of the F Company advance. All of the F Company officers and many of their non-commissioned officers became casualties in their determined assault against the Japanese positions. Finally, late in the afternoon, the company succeeded in pressing forward to their objective, driving the last shattered remnants of the Japanese holding force out. In spite of the heavy battle of January 16, the 2d Battalion had lost only 15 officers and men killed; while the Japanese lost 192 killed, a figure later corroborated by captured Japanese documents. For the next month the 112<sup>th</sup> Cavalry and the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry's 2d Battalion found the Japanese were retiring and unwilling to meet the American forces at Arawe. The period was characterized by numerous patrol clashes.

"Washing-machine" Charley and other Japanese bombers in the meantime made life miserable for the Bushmasters. That base had the Southwest Pacific record for being the most bombed of all areas occupied by our forces. In mid-February, the 3rd Battalion joined the 2d Battalion and assisted in the huge patrol mission assigned. A patrol from F Company moved to the Itni River, over 50 miles away, found Japanese barge bases there crippled, and captured eleven Japanese landing barges and a gunboat. The entire Japanese defense from Arawe to Gasmata was crushed during a three-day onslaught starting on February 28, in which the scattered and beaten remnants of a once-strong enemy force were destroyed or driven away.

Patrols were sent on into Gasmata where they found the Japanese positions abandoned, with planes and ordnance undamaged. With the Marines pressing along the north Shore of New Britain Island and the 2d and 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalions of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry and the 112<sup>th</sup> Cavalry extended for 150 miles from the Itni River to Jaquinot Bay along the south shore, the Japanese were

forced to withdraw, 15,000 strong, into Rabaul. At Rabaul the Australian and American Air Forces and Navies pounded the Japanese without cessation and Rabaul became another Japanese pocket to be bypassed as an ineffective Japanese base of operations. The Arawe operation was a short preview of "coming attractions" for the Bushmasters, attractions that were to come fast and furiously during the next few months.

### **Wakde-Sarmi**

In March and April 1944, the regiment reassembled at Finschafen and was joined by the 147<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion, South Dakota National Guard. Together with the 163d Regimental Combat Team as the Tornado Task Force under command of Brigadier General Edwin D. Patrick, former Chief of Staff of the Sixth Army. The 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry landed at Toem on May 17<sup>th</sup> in a move to divert Japanese troops on Sarmi from the fighting at Hollandia. The 163d Infantry against slight enemy opposition made the landing on the New Guinea coast and the beachhead was established and secured when the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry landed from LCI's. After heavy bombing missions against installations on Wakde Island, troops of the 163d Infantry landed there in the face of heavy machine gun and rifle fire. Strong opposition was received from enemy forces well fortified in pillboxes and concrete bunkers. By D+2 the airstrip had been cleared and engineer units began repairing it. Landings on Like and Niroemoar Islands were made without opposition and air warning stations established.

Meanwhile, on the mainland, strong resistance was encountered near the Tor River. After repelling a counter-attack on Wakde and finally mopping up all remaining hostile forces, the infantry units were evacuated from the island to the mainland, where they assisted in throwing back and enemy bayonet assault at the Tor. Meanwhile, on Wakde, the airstrip had been made serviceable for the landing of C-47's.

Intelligence had reported a battalion of Japanese at Sarmi. The Bushmasters had an idea that this was wrong when they ran into stiff opposition during their advance on Maffin Bay on D+6, but nobody had any idea just how wrong the report was until several days later. Hostile machine gun, mortar and artillery fire made further advance impossible until counter-battery artillery could be brought to bear against the enemy 75mm howitzers. From coconut bunkers enemy automatic weapon fire had pinned the Bushmasters down. On May 25<sup>th</sup> the advance continued, supported by heavy naval and artillery fire. During the night the enemy would withdraw to advantageous defense positions to pin down the advancing troops during the day. When reinforcements arrived, the enemy would withdraw again and again. On the 29<sup>th</sup>, troops of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry withdrew to high ground in the vicinity of Maffin Bay and established an all-around perimeter. Elements of the 163d Infantry were departing for Biak Island, Colonel Erle O. Sandlin, veteran Regular Army Officer, assumed command of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment, replacing Colonel Herndon.

For five days and nights heavy fighting took place along the perimeter and innumerable enemy banzai attacks were repulsed. During one night alone, the 2d Battalion repulsed eight attacks. After one solid hour of mortar fire, the Company I perimeter was attacked by eighty Japanese assaults in waves of ten. Other enemy forces attempted night infiltration against supply areas and antiaircraft positions and in several instances these attempts were successful. Near Maffin Bay, the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion closed with and destroyed a reinforced battalion of the feared Japanese Tiger 36<sup>th</sup> Division, Yamashita's prized veterans of fighting at Malay and Singapore. It was during this fighting that Tokyo Rose, in a short-wave broadcast from the Japanese homeland referred to the Bushmasters as the "butchers of the Pacific."

On June 5<sup>th</sup> elements of the 1<sup>st</sup> Infantry and the 6<sup>th</sup> Engineer Battalion arrived and relieved the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion on the perimeter around the supply dump. The 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry continued its advance supported by tanks, destroying pillboxes and other fortifications. On June 11<sup>th</sup> the balance of the 6<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division arrived and prepared to relieve the 158<sup>th</sup>. Destroyers arriving on the 12<sup>th</sup>, laid down a heavy naval bombardment on known enemy position and on the evening

of the 12<sup>th</sup>, the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry was completely relieved by the 6<sup>th</sup> Division, one of several times in later fighting that the Bushmaster Regiment was to be relieved by an entire division.

As the Japanese were slowly cleared from the Maffin Bay area it became apparent that Sarmi was one of the largest Japanese bases in the South Pacific. Far from having a battalion of troops it had closer to an army. One unofficial estimate placed the number of Japanese opposing the two battalions at ten thousand. A replacement depot, supply dumps and headquarters of the Japanese 36<sup>th</sup> Division was found to be among the installations abandoned by the fleeing Japanese.

## **Noemfoor**

Four days after the regiment was relieved at Sarmi, the commander of the Regimental Combat Team, together with key members of his staff, was called to a planning conference at Finschafen for a discussion of an operation against Noemfoor Island. The Noemfoor operation was to be one of a series of operations carried out on the north coast of New Guinea for the purpose of extending air operations northwestward into the Japanese defensive position in the Netherlands East Indies and the Philippines. Construction of airdromes on Noemfoor would advance allied fighter aircraft operation sixty miles beyond Biak; the most advanced operating base.

Noemfoor is completely surrounded by a coral reef ranging from 200 up to 1000 yards in width, and air photos revealed no place on the perimeter of the island where landing craft could beach. The depth of the water could not be determined from the air photos available. A team of Alamo Scouts under Lieutenant John R. C. McGowan, formerly of Company G, was sent onto the island on the night of June 23d to conduct a reconnaissance. They reported the depth of the water over the reef about four feet; however, the stage of the tide at the time of the reconnaissance was not accurately known. The obvious difficulties presented by the reef led to the conclusion that amphibious tractors and trucks offered the only reasonable chance of a successful landing, and this conclusion became the basis of the plan for the invasion.

Because the mission of the Task Force required the early establishment of airdrome facilities, it was considered desirable to land reasonably close to Kamiri Drome, Japanese airstrip, in order to facilitate rapid seizure of the enemy installation. Landing in this area had the disadvantage of landing in the face of what was estimated to be the strongest enemy installation on the island. Any miscarriage of plans might delay the landing and permit the enemy to recover from the bombardment and inflict heavy casualties on the assault troops. However, it had the advantage of placing the troops immediately on their objective, thus permitting the speedy seizure of the objective as a beachhead before the enemy could fully recover from the shock of the naval gunfire and the aerial bombardment.

On July 1, as the troops were loading for the assault, Tokyo Rose, broadcasting from Japan, announced "the butchers of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry are preparing to land on Noemfoor Island. When they land they will find a wall of steel awaiting them."

D-Day was set as July 2, 1944, H-Hour, 0800. After several days of steady aerial bombardment and what observers said was the most effective naval support they had witnessed, the first wave, supported by three cruisers, fourteen destroyers, three rocket LCI's and additional small craft, crossed the line of departure exactly at H-Hour. They proceeded directly, without effective opposition, to the Kamiri Airstrip, where the troops unloaded and quickly seized and secured a coral ridge. Enemy artillery attempting to fire on the unloading troops was poorly directed and inflicted few casualties. Little opposition was encountered by the assault troops until they had advanced eastward about five hundred yards across the airstrip, where a group of Japanese attacked. Demoralized as a result of the bombardment, they were quickly disposed of by automatic fire. Caves in the area contained similar groups of enemy soldiers and it was necessary to methodically clean them out as the troops progressed forward. This was accomplished with few casualties.

One of the missions of General Patrick's force was to secure, as early as possible, a suitable area in which parachute troops of the 503d Parachute Infantry Regiment could be dropped. At eleven o'clock on D-Day, a radio message was sent to the Commanding General of the Alamo Force, reporting that Kamiri Airstrip was suitable for this purpose. In view of intelligence reports that an enemy force of 3,500 to 4,500 defended the island, it was recommended that the 503d Infantry reinforce the attacking force. Plans were accordingly made for the 1st Battalion to be dropped on Kamiri Airstrip on D+1, to be followed by the 2d and 3rd Battalions on the 4th and 5th of July. The 1st and 2d Battalions were dropped on the airstrip without enemy opposition but sustained such heavy casualties in the jumps that plans for bringing in the 3rd Battalion were changed and it was brought in by LCI's.

On the 4th of July the 1st Battalion of the 158th Infantry crossed the Kamiri River and met the first enemy resistance in force. In the meantime, the 3rd Battalion had advanced to Kornasoren Airdrome and secured it, meeting only slight resistance. Beachhead positions, meanwhile, had been taken over by the paratroopers of the 503rd Infantry. During the night the 1st Battalion was attacked in its night defensive position by a strong enemy force composed of three companies of the 3rd Battalion, 219th Japanese Infantry under the command of Colonel Shimizu. Successive waves charged into automatic weapon fire, which was well placed to meet the situation. The attack continued after daylight and every assault against the position was repulsed. When the main force of Japanese retreated to the southeast they left behind 201 counted dead, against the 1st Battalion's casualty list of two men, both wounded. The 2d Battalion, its perimeter defense position taken over by the 2d Battalion of the 503rd Parachute Infantry, landed at 0925 hours on the morning of July 6 in an amphibious operation on the north side of Roemboi Bay with the mission of seizing Namber Airdrome. The operation, which was supported by three destroyers and one rocket LCI, encountered negligible opposition and was accomplished with no casualties. By 0945 hours the airdrome was occupied and fifteen minutes later a light observation plane of the 147th Field Artillery Battalion made a landing on the airstrip.

Meanwhile, the 1st Battalion advanced into the Japanese gardens south of Namber Road and continued to move southward, meeting only scattered opposition until it reached Namber on July 10th. The 2d Battalion proceeded southeastward, patrolling actively until it reached Menoekwari on July 11th. The 3rd Battalion, in the meantime, advanced to Sjoriboe and Menggari, while the original beachhead positions were still secured by the 503rd Infantry. After the engagement between the Japanese and the 1st Battalion in the Japanese Gardens on July 5th, little organized resistance was encountered and it appeared that the job was one of hunting down and destroying small enemy groups. The island was accordingly divided into two parts; the northern half allotted to the 158th Infantry and the lower half to the 503rd Infantry, and the forces were regrouped according to this plan. Shortly after the regrouping, the 1st Battalion of the 503rd Infantry contacted strong enemy patrols along the Namber River, and elements of the battalion followed the patrols until they struck a Japanese force estimated at five hundred. The enemy attempted a withdrawal, leaving rear guards that made several suicidal attacks against C Company of the battalion. After these attacks were repulsed, the enemy withdrew to Hill 670, where on July 16 the battalion, supported by the 147th Field Artillery Battalion, launched an attack, capturing the hill.

It became evident by July 21st that a Japanese force of considerable strength was still concealed in the center of the island and, from prisoners, it was learned that Colonel Shimizu was still alive and commanding a group of more than five hundred. Elements of both the 158th Infantry and 503rd Infantry attempted to close in on Shimizu, but were unable to contact the main group until August 10th, when Company H, 503rd Infantry, made contact on top of Hill 380. The 147th Field Artillery shelled the enemy positions all night and on the next day two bombers of the 309th Bomb Wing was used against the areas. Shimizu withdrew desperately, constantly pursued by infantry and artillery. On three occasions the enemy counter-attacked without success and, on the night of August 15th, although boxed by five companies, Shimizu skillfully slipped through the American positions and was not contacted again until the 17th, when two hard-fought engagements completely demolished enemy resistance. The toll of enemy casualties during this seven-day period from August 10th to the 17th was 342 killed and 43 captured. The objective now was the capture of Colonel Shimizu, who, according to prisoners, had escaped into the bush with

four of his officers and ten men. The search was spurred on by the knowledge that Shimizu carried a 300-year-old jeweled saber. On August 25<sup>th</sup> a small bivouac area was discovered, one guard was killed and a small quantity of weapons found, but when the campaign was officially closed on August 31<sup>st</sup>, Colonel Shimizu and his small group were still not located.

In contrast to American casualty figures of 45 killed in action and 121 wounded were the Japanese figures of 1729 counted enemy dead and 186 captured. In addition to these figures, 554 Formosans, Koreans, and Chinese were captured and 403 Javanese laborers were recovered. With the operation finished it was possible to determine from captured enemy maps and documents and from captured officers and enlisted men the enemy plans for the defense of the island. It was clear that the attack had been expected and that Tokyo Rose's "wall of steel" had been prepared for the Bushmasters. However, even though the Japanese had detected the Alamo Scouts who made the initial reconnaissance, it was impossible for them to carry out their well-laid plans of defense because of the naval and air bombardments that preceded and supported the landings. It was also clear from information secured from captured prisoners that Shimizu expected reinforcements from New Guinea and constantly preached against suicide.

Before the close of the operation two fighter groups and part of a night fighter group were operating from Kornasoren airstrip, Kamiri strip was in operation, and 15 miles of two-lane coral roads had been constructed, solid testimony to the work of the engineer combat battalions. Over half of the 350 Formosans who surrendered to the Bushmasters were hospitalized for malnutrition, beri-beri, tropical ulcers, malaria and other diseases. Of the group, a small number was selected to be used by the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry as laborers and KP's and remained with the organization until it embarked at Legaspi for Japan. Several learned to speak a little English and became devoted to the Bushmaster. Before they left the outfit on the Bicol Peninsula they were figuring up their points for discharge just as were the GI's, and one of them was able to include five points for a wound received at Damortis. The plight of the Formosans was relatively pleasant compared with that of the Javanese, 3,000 of whom had been gathered from the streets of Soerbaja and other large cities and shipped to Noemfoor where they were forced to construct the airdromes by hand. They were given no food or clothing and were forced to shift for themselves. When driven by hunger to steal from the Japanese they were beheaded or hung by their hands or feet until dead. The 403 of the original 3,000 were a dramatic picture of the meaning of Japan's Greater East Asia Co-Prosperity Sphere for the colonial people of the Pacific.

During the operation our troops, on several occasions, discovered bodies of Japanese with portions of the flesh cut away. This led to the belief that the Japanese were resorting to cannibalism, and further investigation brought forth further and decisive proof of this. Prisoners reported that Formosans were taken on patrol, killed and their flesh eaten; Captain Sugahara, Japanese medical officer, served as mess officer and some of the bodies indicated that the flesh had been cut in an expert and skillful manner. Prisoners reported that they had eaten human flesh on several occasions and in one instance a body two days old had been used for food. They said that the flesh was prepared by cubing and boiling that it was tender, white like pork and tasted like any other meat.

On August 31<sup>st</sup>, the Bushmasters were able to report that the Noemfoor operation was completed with the mission accomplished.

Battery B, 207th Field Artillery Battalion was relieved from assignment to XVIII Corps 9 October 1943 and reassigned to Fourth Army 31 October 1943. Battery B, 207th Field Artillery Battalion (105mm How, Truck Drawn), was reorganized as (8" How, Tractor Drawn) 1 February 1944. Battery B, 207th Field Artillery Battalion was reassigned to III Corps 15 January 1944. Battery B was transferred from Fort Ord, California, to New York Port of Embarkation on 15 July 1944

The time had arrived for B Battery and the rest of the 207<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion to head toward the Shooting War across the ocean. On 20 July 1944, the battalion arrived at Camp Shanks, New York, and less than a month later on 14 August the battalion boarded the transport "Aquatania" and crossed the Atlantic to England, arriving on 5 August 1944. After a short month in England to complete equipping, the battalion joined the battle in France on 8 September 1944

to October 1944; in Belgium 15 October 1944 to 25 October 1944; Germany 25 October 1944 to 17 September 1945; and back in France 17 September 1945 to 3 November 1945. The 207th Field Artillery Battalion had fought their way across France, Belgium and Germany.

## **The Philippines**

Second only to the islands of Japan itself as the objective of Americas fighting men were the Philippines, where American troops had gone down in defeat in 1942. All that had been done before, Guadalcanal, New Guinea, Tarawa, Noemfoor, the dozen of bloody jungle operations that had pushed the American offensive forces farther and farther toward Japan, had the Philippines as their immediate objective.

At midnight, January 10, 1945, a convoy carrying the troops of the 158<sup>th</sup> Regimental Combat Team now under the command of Brigadier General Hanford MacNider, veteran of the New Guinea jungle fighting, entered Lingayen Gulf. General Kruger's Sixth Army had landed at Lingayen on the previous day and was meeting strong enemy resistance. The mission of the Bushmasters was to protect the left flank of the invasion. At seven o'clock on the morning of January 11<sup>th</sup>, the troops made an unopposed landing within the I Corps perimeter and by eleven o'clock General MacNider was commanding his troops on the beach. The initial mission of the Combat Team was the relief of the roadblock being maintained by the 172d Infantry south of Rabon, and by one in the afternoon this was accomplished when the 2d Battalion passed through the roadblock and continued the attack to the north.

Next mission assigned the unit, now attached to the 43<sup>rd</sup> Infantry Division, was the silencing of some Japanese field pieces, which from positions near Damortis were causing considerable damage to the division's offensive. At 1515 hours of the afternoon of the 12<sup>th</sup>, a combat patrol led by Lieutenant Irving Peterson of Fergus Falls, Minnesota, entered Damortis and captured the four enemy field pieces and 150 tons of ammunition that had been stored in the railroad station. On the 15<sup>th</sup> of January the Combat Team launched an all-out attack to seize the Red and Blue Ridges, two hill masses northwest and southwest, respectively, of Amlang where enemy resistance was strong and bitter from positions well prepared near the tops of the steep slopes. An intensive navel barrage was laid on the objectives and the 147<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery supported the infantry patrols that moved out across the valley. The 63<sup>rd</sup> Infantry Regimental Combat Team, which was fighting its way north, was placed under the tactical command of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry and the weight of the combined regiments was thrown against Blue Ridge. Enemy infiltrations were thrown back night after night and a strong enemy counter-offensive on January 20<sup>th</sup> was crushed. By nightfall of the 20<sup>th</sup>, Blue Ridge had fallen. Mopping up operations was completed on the 21<sup>st</sup> when the 63<sup>rd</sup> Infantry reverted from control of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry.

On the trip from Noemfoor to Luzon, General MacNider read the best seller, "Forever Amber," and commented that it was the roughest book he had ever read. When the fighting in which the Bushmasters engaged between January 24<sup>th</sup> and 27<sup>th</sup> was over, the General remarked that it was the dirtiest three days of fighting he had ever seen and he named the pass through which the regiment had fought so furiously "Forever Amber Pass." To the Bushmaster who fought their way past pillboxes and emplacements to score the victory over the Japanese defenders, it will always be "Forever Amber Pass," scene of their meanest fight. Against the most stubborn resistance they had yet faced, troops of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion, reinforced by B Company and a platoon of 4.2mm mortars, attacked up the south end of Amber Ridge. Here there were a complicated system mutually supporting pill boxes further strengthened by caves and deep emplacements presented a serious threat to the offensive and gave the enemy control of the important Rosario-Damortis road. The battalion's initial attack was beaten back but smaller groups continued to harass the enemy perimeter during the night of the 24<sup>th</sup>. On the 25<sup>th</sup>, G Company was added to the attack and a platoon of light tanks entered the battle. With the reinforcement and the supporting fire of the 147<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery, the Regimental Cannon Company and the attached chemical mortars, the battalion was able to partially occupy the ridge. On the 25<sup>th</sup>, the 172<sup>d</sup> Infantry Regiment was attached to the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry forming the MacNider Force, a tactical organization. On the 26<sup>th</sup> the enemy continued to offer stubborn resistance, which began to

crumble under the incessant hammering. In the afternoon, the regiment, supported by tanks, crushed through the enemy lines and entered Cataguintangan. The last enemy resistance was eliminated in the sector on the 27<sup>th</sup> and the Battle of Forever Amber, dirtiest of the war, was over, with a hundred Japanese field pieces captured or destroyed.

With Forever Amber Pass behind it, the Combat Team again swung north to continue its original mission of protecting the Sixth Army Flank, blocking any possibility of enemy reinforcements moving south from San Fernando, La Union. While the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry was fighting its way through Forever Amber, the 172<sup>nd</sup> Infantry had swung east from Amber Ridge. The regiment succeeded in taking the high ground north of Rosario in a brilliantly executed operation and patrols entered the town on January 25<sup>th</sup>, capturing huge amounts of enemy supplies and a large deposit of buried gold and currency. By the 27<sup>th</sup>, the 172<sup>nd</sup> Infantry was able to turn north, forming a line between the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry and the other regiments of the 43<sup>rd</sup> Infantry Division. From the 28<sup>th</sup> of January until the 13<sup>th</sup> of February, the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry held this line while the remainder of I Corps performed a huge pivoting movement designed to cut the island of Luzon completely in half. Bushmaster patrols ranged through the heights already taken, hunting out enemy remnants and destroying caves and dugouts. Counter-fire from the 147<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery, and the last threat to the beach area was eliminated in Two-Gun Valley, the gun area 300 yards north of Cataguintangan.

Two-Gun Valley was the location of the two largest enemy artillery pieces on Luzon, where planes had been unable to locate and destroy them. One position was finally uncovered and a patrol from K Company over-ran the position on January 31<sup>st</sup>, capturing a 30cm howitzer. The following day a patrol encountered another enemy emplacement, well organized with machine gun and mortar support. Company G, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry, then under the command of Captain Bard W. Heart, a full-blooded Cherokee Indian, was dispatched to eliminate the position. After establishing contact and driving the enemy back, a perimeter was established for the night. About midnight the men felt the terrible concussion of the muzzle blast of a huge artillery piece located immediately in front of them, so close that the jabbering of the gun crew could be heard between the blasts. The huge weapon fired ten rounds before the 81mm mortars attached to G Company were able to silence it; in between the blasts the infantrymen were able to hear the weapon being re-loaded for the next round. On the next morning, supported by tanks, the troops of G Company assaulted and crushed the enemy defense and captured the last artillery threat to the San Fabian area.

For capturing the huge gun and destroying 164 of the enemy with only one Bushmaster wounded and none killed, G Company was awarded a Presidential Unit Citation, which declared "the fine display of team-work, coupled with individual confidence, is a credit to the Armed Forces of the United States and reflects the highest type of Company operation." The principal reason for the failure of planes to discover the positions of the guns, which had a barrel and breech length of 16 ½ feet with a bore diameter of 12 ½ inches, was the superior job of camouflage done by the Japanese. Native houses built on rollers covered the guns. When the guns were being fired the houses were rolled to the side. When silent, the houses covered them and gave the area an illusion of idyllic peace and quiet. The breech diameter of the guns was 35 inches, and a round of ammunition weighed 1300 pounds. The maximum range was estimated to be 16,500 yards and the resulting crater was approximately 28 feet across and nine feet deep. The howitzers were two of the three operated by the Fourth Independent Artillery Battalion. The third gun was vaguely described in captured correspondence as being in the "Southern Sector."

On The 13th of February the 33rd Infantry Division relieved the Combat Team, second time that the Bushmasters were relieved by a division and the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry moved to a rest camp at Tarlac. The cost had been high, 87 Bushmaster killed and 397 wounded. Against this figure, however, was a figure of 1,079 dead Japanese and six prisoners, in addition to innumerable enemy sealed in caves, probably as many again as those officially counted. Major General Innis P. Swift, Commanding General of I Corps, from which the Combat Team was now relieved, and Major General Leonard F. Wing, Commanding General of the 43<sup>rd</sup> Infantry Division, had this to say about the Bushmasters: "Your initial breakthrough in the mountain strongholds of the enemy and the sealing of the coastal plain north of Damortis was a large contribution factor in

the success of this operation. The persistent aggressiveness in mopping up enemy resistance in your zone of advance to secure the vital Damortis-Rosario Road and the gallantry displayed in overcoming a skillful and determined enemy in the trying and difficult terrain through which your organization advanced is indicative of the highest professional attainments.”

To this Brigadier General Hanford MacNider, who knew from first-hand participation what his men had gone through and what they had accomplished, added: “The Chinese have a proverb, which reads ‘The Road to Victory is Up the Steep Sides of Mountains.’ You know all about this. To be able to say in years to come that you fought along the Damortis-Rosario line with the 158<sup>th</sup> Combat Team will give you a proud and well-earned distinction. You have proven yourselves a credit to the United States Army and to your country. I am proud to be associated with such a gallant aggregation of American fighting men.” Thus, while the II Corps marched their divisions down “Glory Road” to Manila against negligible opposition, the Bushmaster and the 43<sup>rd</sup> Infantry Division held the flank in bitter fighting practically unnoticed and certainly unpublicized. If there was a fight, they wanted to be there, no matter whom marched with the headlines.

## **Batangas**

The “rest” at Tarlac proved to be another session of camp building for the Bushmasters. While the troops were building up the rest-area, General MacNider and his staff were occupied in planning the next operations scheduled for the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry; operations that were scheduled to take the regiment into still tougher fighting that it had experienced at Damortis and Rosario.

Attached now to the 11<sup>th</sup> Airborne Division, the Combat Team was given the mission of opening Balayan and Batangas Bay in southern Luzon to allied shipping. On March 1<sup>st</sup> the troops left their rest area for a wild midnight ride through the sniper-infested streets of burning Manila, headed south for Balayan. With the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion leading, the attack was launched on March 2<sup>nd</sup> with the objective of reaching the initial phase line extending south from San Nicholas, on Lake Taal to the twin towns of Lemery and Taal on Balayan Bay by March 7. Before the advance down Highway 17 was fairly underway, a strong enemy position was located, blocking the road about 200 yards west of Langanan and a huge tank trap several thousand yards in length was encountered. All three of the battalion’s rifle companies deployed for action while mortar and artillery registered in on the target area. Although a double-envelopment was launched under a heavy barrage of mortar and artillery fire, the enemy continued to lay down heavy offensive fires throughout the day. The following morning the attack was resumed under an intensive barrage and by 0900 hours the opposition was liquidated. With C Company left to mop-up any scattered resistance, the battalion moved on toward Lemery.

While the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion was battling to clear the road, the 2<sup>nd</sup> Battalion had by-passed the pocket and by dusk had advanced to Sampaga, 4500 yards east of Balayan without making any contact with the enemy. On March 6 the two battalions moved forward toward Lemery, with the 2<sup>nd</sup> Battalion well in advance. An enemy group was reported at Calaca and G Company dropped out of the column to investigate, returning after it had killed four members of a Japanese patrol. This was the only contact made enroute to Lemery, which was entered by Colonel Sandlin constituting himself as an advance patrol by 1500 hours on the afternoon of the March 6. By seven that night, the two battalions were in the town, the regimental CP had moved up, the reserve battalion was in Matingain, and two batteries of the 147<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery had displaced forward to Bucal with an observation post in the Taal Church. This was all accomplished by forced marches by the infantry, all on foot.

Before Balayan Bay could be opened for shipping, two enemy 5-inch guns, reported to be located near Sanpiro on the west shore of the Bay, had to be destroyed. This task was assigned to a special task force made up of the I&R Platoon, the Anti-Tank Company, a section of 81mm mortars, one M-7 self-propelled (SP) howitzer and 200 Philippine guerrillas. On March 5 the I&R Platoon located the guns and counted a dozen Japanese around them. Artillery fire was directed against the positions that night and on the March 6, guerrilla patrols reported that the guns had been knocked out and they had been unable to contact the enemy. The task force moved into position west of the guns in order to verify the destruction but was met by rifle and mortar fire

when the infantrymen attempted to advance. At dawn on March 8, the attack was again launched, with the M-7 howitzer starting fires and causing explosions in the emplacements. The enemy continued to resist stubbornly until early afternoon, when the two guns were captured and completely destroyed.

After two days of heavy fighting near Lemery, elements of the Combat Team crossed the Pansipit River and pushed aggressively forward toward Cuenca and Dalipit, where a Japanese roadblock was overcome under heavy enemy artillery concentration. Near Baguntubig, two more 5-inch guns were captured. On March 8, the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry was suddenly ordered to refrain from any further advance in order to investigate rumors of by-passed enemy groups operating in the rear areas. Patrols scoured the area west of Lemery without contact while other units reconnoitered toward Cuenca and south to the Calumpán Peninsula, without meeting effective resistance. Meanwhile, the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, still subjected to serious enemy artillery fire, merely withdrew a few hundred yards each night under cover of darkness and permitted the enemy to shell an empty position area.

When higher authority was finally satisfied that no Japanese forces had been left behind, the Combat Team was ordered to continue its advance with the mission of taking the city of Batangas, important shipping center of southern Luzon. The 2d Battalion, moving quickly at daybreak on March 11, seized the town and dock area in a lightning thrust, which was completely successful by noon of that day. Northeast of the city, serious opposition was encountered and the enemy used anti-aircraft guns clustered around their big airstrip to good advantage. Fighting continued throughout the night and the next morning but, after a supporting barrage laid down by the newly attached 472d Field Artillery Battalion, the slow advance was resumed. That afternoon, hard-hitting tanks of the 44<sup>th</sup> Tank Battalion moved in to silence enemy automatic weapon fire and, before dark, all of the patrols were searching out the areas east, north and south of the town.

While the 1st Battalion was fretting under heavy artillery fire, and the 2d Battalion was marching into Batangas, the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion was heading southwest to clear the Calumpán Peninsula, that finger of land, which separates the Balayan and Batangas Bays. On March 10, rifle companies moved south from near Majon Hill. After repeated contacts with small enemy groups, all seemingly headed toward Lipa, during which scores of caves and emplacements were over-run. One 155mm gun and an American M-3 tank being used by the enemy were captured; the infantrymen advanced west to Santa Maria where a large ammunition dump was captured and destroyed.

Since intelligence reports indicated that the enemy was attempting to gather at Mabini, I Company moved southwest through the hills north of the peninsula while K and L Companies advanced from Santa Maria toward Mabini. After slight contacts, strong resistance was encountered on March 13 near Mainaga, where steep cliffs nearly crop the road into the sea. Swinging north in a move to outflank the enemy, the infantrymen uncovered additional points of resistance. After dark that night, the enemy landed 150 men from Q boats and barges in the rear of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion, where they were successful in severing communication lines for a few hours. All attacks on the perimeter were beaten back after savage fighting which cost the Japanese 97 men killed and 14 barges captured. The following day all companies were able to advance and Mount Muntingtubig fell to K Company.

On March 14, in an effort to defeat the Japanese strategy of rallying their forces at Mabini, Colonel Sandlin sent C Company in LCM's in shore-to-shore operation to Dagaten, where it made an unopposed landing and attacked the enemy from the rear. On the 15<sup>th</sup>, Mabini fell to the Bushmaster. An enemy night attack aimed at retaking the lost town was beaten back with heavy casualties and on March 16 all remaining enemy opposition in the sector was crushed and the units made contact. After two days of hunting down infiltration groups, the Anti-tank Company took over the area, relieving the battalion to join in the battle for Cuenca.

A week's delay in the embarkation of the Combat Team gave it time for one more scrap, so the 11<sup>th</sup> Airborne Division, to which the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry had been attached for the Batangas operation,

assigned General MacNider's men the task of capturing a line running east from Lake Taal and including Mount Macalod, San Jose Jill and a small hill lying between them. For convenience, the hills were designated Hills One, Five and Eight. The 756th and 760th Field Artillery Battalions were added to the Combat Team for the operation.

Under cover of darkness on March 18, the two assault battalions moved to final assembly areas from which the 1st Battalion was to make a frontal attack against Hill One, while the 2d Battalion enveloped the left of the enemy's position. The 2d Battalion, moving north from Batangas, made a routine march to the final assembly area but the 1st Battalion, on the left, was forced to fight its way into position. After a short artillery preparation, the attack started and by late afternoon of the first day, Hills 8 and 5 had been captured. Hill One, Mount Macalod, however, was not so easy. Advancing elements were forced to advance over open rice paddies and were subjected to automatic weapon fire from enemy machine guns located in houses and in depressions. On the night of the 20th, the 3rd Battalion moved into position between the 1st and 2d Battalions. While A Company was pinned down and unable to gain ground, B Company found a covered route of advance and overran a 30cm howitzer position, killing thirteen of the enemy, and cleaning out several of the houses which had been used by the enemy. The howitzer was the one the 158th Infantry sought during the Lingayen operation; they had captured the long sought-after third gun of the 4th Independent Field Artillery Battalion. That crack unit of the Imperial Japanese Army was now completely liquidated.

On the morning of March 20, Company A pushed forward from rice paddy to rice paddy. Since it was impossible to adjust artillery fire without endangering A and K Companies, which were advancing, 81mm mortar fire was placed on the target and an effective smoke screen was laid down. Under cover of the smoke, elements of A Company pushed forward in a furious fire fight and secured a position behind an earth retaining wall about ten yards short of the Japanese position. Intense fire was placed on the enemy positions and A and I Companies were able to advance, supported by tanks. One by one the enemy positions were liquidated and, on the 20th and 21st of March, patrols succeeded in clearing the area of scattered enemy elements. On the 24th of March the 11th Airborne Division had relieved all Combat Team units and the entire regiment was at Lemery preparing for the next operations.

The mission, which had been assigned the Bushmaster, the opening of Balayan and Batangas Bays to American shipping, had been accomplished. Another great port was in American hands, and the Bushmasters were ready for the next objective. The cost was 35 men killed and 128 wounded, while, during the same period, the enemy had lost 781 counted dead and 14 prisoners.

## **The Bicol**

Still even as the troops of the 158th Infantry was accomplishing their mission on Batangas, planning and preparation was underway for the next operation. An amphibious attack upon Japanese forces holding the Bicol Peninsula of southern Luzon, vital because of its control over shipping through the San Bernardino Strait separating from Leyte. Five days after the 11th Airborne Division at Batangas had relieved the Combat Team it loaded the three APD's, five LST's, eight LCT's and four LSM's that were to make up the convoy. At high tide on March 30 the convoy sailed from Lemery for the Bicol Peninsula port of Legaspi.

D-Day was Easter Sunday, April 1, 1945. Back home in Tucson, or Pamyra or Grand Rapids their folks were wearing new Easter bonnets and were on their way to church where they would pray for their sons, husbands and sweethearts. On the Bicol, the approved Easter bonnet was made from steel and the church services were held between briefing sessions on APD's and LST's.

It was a beautiful Easter Sunday when the convoy entered Albay Gulf. By 0800 hours the naval escort was in position to place its preliminary bombardment upon known and suspected enemy installations while mine sweepers opened passages to the beach. A flight of B-24's followed by five flights of A-20's and three flights of P-38's covered the objective area. At 0930 hours enemy artillery engaged the USS Bailey but was unable to score a hit although the ship was bracketed.

Defying long-range fire from the enemy anti-aircraft weapons, flak and rockets, boats moved in to blast the shore ahead of the first wave of assault troops.

At 1000 hours elements of two battalions hit the beach at Legaspi port and fought their way rapidly inland. At 1030 hours General MacNider assumed command of his forces ashore and established a command post in Legaspi. By eleven, the leading platoons were 600 yards southwest of Legaspi port on the south and were nearing the airfield on the north. All remaining infantry units were ashore and LCM's and LST's were discharging cargo. One platoon of E Company reached the base of Capuntuacan Point at 1115 hour without encountering any organized resistance and by 1200 hours the initial beachhead was secured. The town of Legaspi was captured by 1300 hours and by 1400 hours the airstrip had been taken.

While the assault troops were pushing inland, beach and shore parties and unloading details were working feverishly to empty the ships and set up supply dump areas. The soft volcanic sand slowed the movement of the vehicles but wire netting was laid in front of each ramp and bulldozers pulled the vehicles to firmer ground. Units of the 1279<sup>th</sup> Engineer Combat Battalion tackled Legaspi port and by noon the streets were cleared of bombing debris. Before six in the evening all ships had been unloaded and had withdrawn from the port.

By dusk, L Company had patrolled north along the coast to Libog without contacting enemy elements. Patrols from the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion pushed west and southwest from Legaspi airfield, while elements of the 2d Battalion searched the high ground south of Legaspi and west of Daraga. The 147<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion was in position at the north end of the landing beach and was preparing to support the advance, while troops of the 1279<sup>th</sup> Engineer Combat Battalion were constructing beach roads and clearing the port area of mines and debris. At dusk on D-Day, E Company encountered the first serious enemy resistance when it was attacked by a strong Japanese force at a point about 800 yards from Daraga. During the night the company was subjected to small arms fire from three sides while enemy artillery and rockets fired over the entire area. The 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion made contact near Kulian and engaged a stubborn enemy force. To defeat this strategy, the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion concentrated its forces and prepared to attack the enemy's uncovered left flank, while the 2d and 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalions attacked abreast through thick jungle in the face of enemy machine gun, mortar and rocket fire.

Patrols north to Tiwi Point and around Mount Mayon to Guinobatan reported no Japanese troops. The road south of Legaspi, although blocked by felled trees, and tank traps, was empty of the enemy and other patrols to Mount Bariwy reported it clear. Two five-inch naval guns, which had engaged the convoy, had been abandoned in good condition on the nose of Mount Bariwy. The enemy had evacuated hastily, leaving machine guns, radio equipment and a large stock of supplies behind. It was clear that the enemy had withdrawn its forces to concentrate them in foxholes and emplacements controlling Highway 1. The fight was on for the road.

The 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion moved along the Yawa River bed, wheeled to the left, attacked and succeeded in gaining a toehold in high ground southwest of Busay. For two days they battled stubbornly resisting enemy forces, then when the resistance collapsed, moved south along the road to Daraga. By D+8, patrols from the battalion were on Highway 1 and the entire battalion reached the road on April 10, battling its way through swamp and jungle. A strong roadblock maintained by the 210<sup>th</sup> AAA AW Battalion, meanwhile, secured the right flank of the Combat Team. While the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion was battling its way to the highway, the 2d and 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalions were continuing their attack to the west. The enemy took full advantage of the terrain, which was well suited for defense, and brought into battle every weapon in its command. Repelling banzai attacks, the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion utilized two 40mm guns of the 210<sup>th</sup> AAA AW Battalion, which drove the Japanese from their foxholes by firing into the trees to achieve tree bursts into the area in front of the battalions. The same guns were also used in repelling a strong enemy force, which attempted to infiltrate the 2d Battalion position. For two days, the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion fought bitterly to cross a strongly defended ravine. Fighting desperately, the 2d Battalion secured high ground west of the highway while the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion secured the vital road junction. After a week of hard fighting, access to Highway 1 had been gained and the important communication line was captured.

## **Sorsogon**

While the Japanese were preventing access to Highway 1 by their delaying tactics, General MacNider was planning a new strategy designed to gain control of the Sorsogon Province and cut off enemy forces there. On the morning of April 6, five LCM's loaded with the Regimental Anti-tank Company, reinforced, departed from Legaspi and headed south where they landed at Bacon, Sorsogon. Meeting little opposition, they quickly crossed the peninsula to Sorsogon, capturing the Bicol terminal of the Trans-Pacific telegraphic cable. Motorized patrols ranged the road-net throughout the province and determined that the only Japanese force consisted of 200 Japanese and 160 Formosans, concentrated in the vicinity of San Francisco. The enemy force received regular bombing attacks as the 2d Battalion prepared to move south as soon as roads and bridges could be repaired and cleared of mines. With one engineer squad sent by water to Sorsogon and working up ahead, this work was quickly accomplished and the battalion was able to reach Bulan on April 12. On the 13<sup>th</sup> the enemy force attacked, using heavy mortar, automatic weapons fire, 25mm and rocket fire. A two-pronged counter-attack quickly forced them to withdraw in order to prevent being encircled.

On April 15 the battalion attacked the enemy force from the east and west with only 400 yards separating the friendly forces. On the 16<sup>th</sup>, the Japanese launched a desperate counter-offensive which was beaten back after five hours of furious fighting, after which the battalion again resumed the offensive, breaking all organized resistance and forcing the remaining Japanese to flee to the hills. 154 Formosans surrendered as patrols chased the scattered garrison into the hills. On April 18, the province was turned over to organized guerrilla forces and the battalion rejoined the regiment.

Persistent reports received by intelligence indicated that an enemy force was terrorizing the civilian population on Rapu Rapu Island, one of the four forming the northern edge of Albay Gulf. On April 10, the I&R Platoon embarked in LCM's for an inter-island reconnaissance, returning on the 13<sup>th</sup> to report a Japanese force definitely on Rapu Rapu, while Batan, Cagraray and San Miguel Islands were clear. Following a radio report from the I&R Platoon on the 11<sup>th</sup>, G Company had left for Rapu Rapu where it surrounded the Japanese garrison and completely destroyed it in a sharp fire fight the following day. G Company had six men wounded in the operation, most of them being struck by rock fragments when the last enemy cave position was blown up. The troops were guests of the civilian population in a "Liberation Ceremony" and then rejoined the battalion at Sorsogon on the 14<sup>th</sup>.

On April 18, a small American force carried arms and ammunition to guerrillas on the island of Catanduanes, a sub-province of Albay, where the Japanese were suspected to have radar and radio stations. Supported by guerrillas, the force attacked the Japanese garrison on the 19<sup>th</sup>, forcing it to withdraw to a single hill position where it was destroyed on the 21<sup>st</sup>, together with the radio and radar equipment.

## **Camalig**

Back on Luzon proper, the 1<sup>st</sup> and 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion spent a few days patrolling the area around the captured Highway 1, taking stock of captured enemy equipment, and taking a bath. On the night of April 9, the 147<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion scored a series of hits on ammunition dumps around Malabog, causing spectacular fires. After an air reconnaissance of the area, the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion started moving northwest on the road to Camalig. At Malabog the battalion over-ran enemy positions including five 75mm howitzers, while guerrillas were leading the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion to positions on the slopes of Tagaytay Ridge. The two battalions prepared to attack enemy positions in the Cituinan Hill mass. The dominant feature of the mill mass is Cituinan Hill, a volcanic eruption with twin crests separated by a slight saddle. Stretching to the southeast is Tagaytay Ridge, where the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion had taken up positions. To the west and southwest of Cituinan are Mina and Santa Cruzan Hills, each falling away steeply on its western and northern slopes. The entire mass is characterized by a complete lack of pattern, with noses and ridges

leading to peaks, tortuous paths winding through deep valleys and often coming to abrupt halts. The ridges are narrow, frequently only a few feet in width, and the sides of them are too steep to permit climbing. The vegetation, mostly abaca plants, is lush and dense, with normal visibility about thirty feet. A maze of trails interlace the area, difficult to detect and more difficult to follow. A combination of all these factors made accurate map location of troops virtually impossible and it was only when the battalions had advanced to a point where visual contact was possible that unit locations could be accurately pinpointed.

On April 12, the attack on the hill mass began, with the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion advancing from the south and the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion feeling out enemy positions east of Camalig. In the south only scattered contacts were made, but near Camalig the enemy was well dug in behind barbed wire entanglements and they brought rifle, mortar, machine gun, 25mm and rocket fire to bear against the Bushmasters of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion. Unable to advance up the steep gravel slopes, the troops moved west to force their way up the more gradual northern slopes of Cituinan. From the 13<sup>th</sup> through the 15<sup>th</sup> of April, the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion advanced slowly north through terrain that grew progressively more rugged and through vegetation that grew denser. Contact with the small enemy forces, which attacked mainly at night, was an attempt to cut communications. First contact with a stabilized enemy force came on the 16<sup>th</sup> on the lower approaches to Cituinan Hill.

During the same period, the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion was encountering more serious resistance and had been unable to discover a single soft spot anywhere in the enemy's northern defenses. On the 13<sup>th</sup> the battalion attacked with all three of its rifle companies, over-running a number of small trench systems, but being prevented from any rapid advance by an extensive series of mine fields and booby traps. That night a determined counter-attack on the battalion's command post was repulsed, but farther west, the Japanese were able to gain a position in Camalig after hard fighting and they placed small arms fire on the Cannon Company and elements of the 210<sup>th</sup> AAA AW Battalion. Company I cleared out the town and moved out on Highway 1 toward Iriga, while the remainder of the battalion fought yard-by-yard against cleverly concealed enemy defensive positions. By systematically isolating and blasting out strong enemy pillboxes containing 25mm and caliber .303 automatic weapons, the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion was able to get within sight of the peak by April 20. One company was halted astride a sharp ridge 600 yards south of the peak while another was advancing from the west and was about the same distance from the top. As the troops advanced, the enemy positions were growing stronger and rifle units were able to advance only a few yards each day after desperate fighting. Mortar barrages knocked out some of the defenses, but after roads were completed, it was possible to put M-7's in position for direct fire and, at close range. The devastating fire of these weapons deprived the enemy of his last desire to hold his prepared defense. All companies were able to resume their advance, isolating and wiping out enemy groups, and by the 26<sup>th</sup>, A and B Companies were nearly to the top of the southern peak of the main ridge lines, while C Company was approaching Mina Hill.

Meanwhile, the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion was fighting fiercely in an effort to work up the northern approaches to the main ridge, repulsing repeated attempts of infiltration parties to cut supply lines and isolate forward companies. As the riflemen worked their way slowly up the steep slopes supported by daily bombing of the Japanese positions, the enemy made an increasing number of counter-attacks in unsuccessful attempts to dislodge the Bushmasters from the hard-won positions. Later, on April 26, I Company broke through the last enemy defensive line and gained the top of the northern peak of the main ridge.

The 2d Battalion, having cleaned up Sorogon, returned to Malabo on April 18 and, on the following day, attacked west, placing pressure on the Japanese from a third side. The troops immediately encountered another system of trenches and mutually supporting strong points and the pattern of the fighting was the same as that encountered by the other battalions. A company advanced until it was stopped by enemy fire, usually at short range. If a firefight and grenades were not sufficient to dislodge the defenders, they were pinned down by machine gun fire while a mortar barrage was poured in on them. If this method was unsuccessful, the M-7 Self-propelled howitzers were brought in, making their own roads as they came, blasting the enemy from his position. On the 26<sup>th</sup>, the battalion was 350 yard short of the crest. On the 27, Japanese resistance crumbled, and on April 28 it collapsed completely. The 1st and 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalions swept

forward and affected a junction on the main ridge, while the 2d Battalion drove forward, eliminating the last pocket of resistance between it and the ridgeline. Patrols roamed the valleys, searching out caves, while others hunted down small groups of stragglers and wounded who had managed to slip out of the hill trap. One large cave dug deep into the base of Mina Hill contained the bodies of Commander Sato and Lieutenant Yamashita, his second-in-command, hara-kiri apologists for the inability of their forces to hold the hill mass.

On April 22, the Combat Team had passed to control of XIV Corps with no change in its mission. With almost 2,000 enemy casualties already accounted for, General MacNider and Colonel Sandlin now regrouped their forces and prepared to move north. While the fighting for the hill mass at Camalig was in progress small patrol had raced north, checking the villages and roads. But they had succeeded in making only one contact with a small enemy force, estimated to be one platoon, dug in on the north bank of the Pauili River astride Highway 1. Patrols from I Company and the I & R Platoon continued to search the area but made no further contact until the regiment moved north on April 29. On the 29<sup>th</sup> the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion moved into the area, approaching the Pauili River position held by the small enemy group and B Company crossed the river in an envelopment move. The enemy hurriedly withdrew, realizing the danger to their flank. On the 1<sup>st</sup> of May, the Bushmasters acquired new territory consisting of almost the entire Bicol Peninsula and additional troops consisting of the 5<sup>th</sup> Cavalry Regiment, reinforced to combat team status. Part of the new force had come overland from the north, where the 1<sup>st</sup> Cavalry Division was fighting, while the remainder had moved south by water.

Action on Highway 27 had begun on April 18, when the Anti-tank Company had moved north toward Naga. On the following day the company over-ran a 155mm gun position (American model M-1918) and three days later located another which was taken on the 27<sup>th</sup>, following an air strike. Guns three and four were captured the next day near Timi Timi. None of the positions were seriously defended, in spite of the fact that the defending garrisons out-numbered the attacking Bushmasters. On the 29<sup>th</sup> the 2d Battalion moved north and the Anti-tank Company was attached to it. The reinforced battalion swept west on Highway 27, searching in vain for reported enemy forces with only one real firefight highlighting its progress when it captured a large ammunition dump of artillery and small arms ammunition in the village of Salvacion. On May 2, it joined the 3<sup>rd</sup> Battalion, moving east, leaving three more Japanese constructed airstrips littered with destroyed planes now within the American lines.

## **Mount Isarog**

Higher headquarters had estimated the enemy combat troops in the Legaspi area at approximately 1500, far short of the number actually destroyed. Now their information indicated several thousand Japanese dug in around the hundred-mile volcanic hill mass of Mount Isrog, which dominates the northeastern end of Bicol Peninsula. Reports received by General MacNider indicated that the main enemy force would be found near Curry on the southwestern slope, where heavy air strikes were placed with excellent coverage but unknown results. It was decided to call off further air action until ground patrols could secure additional information. First step was to block all known and suspected routes the enemy might be able to use to escape from the mountain. Patrols were placed in positions covering all known roads and trails leading from the suspected positions, while the other patrols from the two regiments started an aggressive search for enemy installations. The two regiments moved up the mountain to a height of about 3,500 feet, sending patrols ahead.

On the 4<sup>th</sup> of May some indication of what was ahead, C Troop of the 5th Cavalry Regiment moved into the town of Curry without opposition. Three American and three Japanese trucks were captured, along with quantities of supplies, but not enemy was in evidence. Above Curry, the mountain became increasingly rugged, with deep gorges cut sharply into the steep slopes, forming obstacles, which were impassable for much of their length. Great waterfalls tumbled over rock escarpments, their magnificent beauty lost in the struggle to reach them and in the ever-present threat of enemy snipers. Two days of climbing and searching resulted in the discovery of only a couple of dozen Japanese, who were annihilated by K Company. Other small forces were contacted and destroyed by other units of the regiment but, by May 9, when a patrol

of the 2d Battalion reached the peak of the mountain no enemy group larger than twenty-five had been contacted.

Captured documents and prisoners all agreed that there had been at least 300 of the enemy on the mountain. Not only had they been there but also they were still functioning more or less normally since they were mimeographing field orders and planning to "drive the invaders into the sea." Patrols spread out across the province of Camarines Sur in an intensive search for the hostile elements, and two amphibious patrols explored the Saramoan Peninsula. Scattered forces of Japanese were contacted almost daily but it was evident by the end of May that there was no longer organized enemy resistance on the Bicol Peninsula. Civilians brought in an increasing number of prisoners and captured weapons were often rusted as to be completely useless.

Late in May the 147<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion moved back to Legaspi and set up its rainy season bivouac area. On May 29, the infantry began to follow suit. By the first week of June, the troops of the 5<sup>th</sup> Cavalry had reverted to control of the 1<sup>st</sup> Cavalry Division and by June 13 all units of the Combat Team had withdrawn to camp areas. On the 14<sup>th</sup>, the Bicol Brigade, a Philippine Army unit, composed of former guerrilla units, which had supported the Combat Team before and during the Legaspi landing, was tactically disposed to assume responsibility for the security of the peninsula. The American forces continued to engage in combat patrolling, searching out suspected localities for small hostile forces, while an amphibious patrol circled the Caramoan Peninsula in an unsuccessful search for the crew of an American bomber. The Bicol Brigade meanwhile demonstrated its ability to provide for the Peninsula's security by killing a considerable number of enemy stragglers.

On June 30, the Luzon campaigns, and with it the Bicol operation, was officially terminated. Efforts to hold the four Bicol provinces had cost the enemy 2,834 counted dead and 565 prisoners. Three operations in Luzon had cost the Bushmasters 216 dead and 976 wounded. The same three operations cost the Japanese 4,694 dead and 585 captured.

### **Off to Yokohama**

With the Philippines once again in American hands and with Okinawa securely in the control of the Tenth Army, there was no doubt in the mind of any Bushmaster about the next campaign. Clearly the next fighting would be the most crucial and most difficult of the war, the invasion of Japan. General MacNider prescribed a rigorous training program for his troops in anticipation of the hard days ahead; and the troops prescribed for themselves a few hours of relaxation in the towns and barrios of the Bicol. Naga, Legaspi, Ligao, Tabaco, Iriga, all provided a little diversion and entertainment for the battle-weary troops.

August brought the welcome news that the Japanese would surrender and it would not be necessary for the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry to make the D-2 landings on the southern islands of Japan for which the outfit was scheduled. September came with news of the final surrender on board the U.S.S. Missouri in the waters of Tokyo Bay. Now attached to XI Corps of General Robert Eichelberger's Eighth Army, the Bushmaster prepared for their job of occupation. With almost four years of over-seas service completed, with 312 days and nights of the toughest jungle fighting under its belt, the 158<sup>th</sup> Regimental Combat Team embarked at Legaspi on October 1, 1945, and sailed for Yokohama. Beautiful Mount Mayon, its symmetrical slopes soaring nine thousand feet high in the distance, loomed in the background as the Bushmasters bid their farewells to the Philippines and sailed out of Albay Gulf.

With the 158<sup>th</sup> on the final mission were the 147<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion, which had supported the Bushmasters from the early days of the New Guinea operations; the 1279<sup>th</sup> Engineer Combat Battalion, veterans of Bougainville and a half dozen other Pacific operations; 3295<sup>th</sup> Signal Service Platoon; the 246<sup>th</sup> Chemical Service Platoon; Allied Translation Intelligence Section, loyal Japanese-Americans who had gone through every Bushmaster campaign; the 28<sup>th</sup> Message Center Team and the 37<sup>th</sup> Radio Team of the 4025<sup>th</sup> Signal Service Group; the 161<sup>st</sup> Finance Disbursement Section; and the 108<sup>th</sup> Army Ground Forces Band (formerly the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment Band).

Few men in the convoy will ever forget the trip to Japan or the typhoon, which chased the convoy for twelve days. On October 13, the Combat Team landed in Yokohama and proceeded to Utsunomiya, Capital City of Tochigi Prefecture, seventy miles north of Tokyo. Here Colonel E.O. Sandlin, veteran commander of the Infantry Regiment, relieved General MacNider as Commander of the Combat Team. The areas taken over at Utsunomiya formerly housed unit of the 40<sup>th</sup> Japanese Regiment. Reconnaissance was made of the prefecture, guards were placed at the Utsunomiya Airfield and the Utsunomiya Airdrome, and Japanese Army stores were located and inventoried. On October 23, a cache of metals belonging to the Japanese Finance Ministry was found in a limestone quarry near the town of Oya and 24 tons of silver, together with huge quantities of other metals, were removed to Tokyo.

The movement of high-point men to replacement depots began in earnest and in January 1946, the Combat Team, screened of low-point men, was inactivated and returned to the United States. The war was over for the Bushmasters. Regulars were prone to spare little praise for Reserve Component units, but General Walter Kruger was loud in his praise for the Arizona outfit. The Theater Commander, General Douglas MacArthur, took the time to declare, "No greater fighting combat team has ever deployed for battle."

The 207th Field Artillery Battalion remained in the European Theater of Operations until 5 November 1945, when it departed from Marseilles, France, on the transport "Westerly Victory". During its time in Europe, the battalion was assigned to III Corps and then to the 9th Army. The battalion arrived at Camp Kilmer, New Jersey on 14 November 1945 and was inactivated there two days later.

## **Back Home**

Back home to mothers, wives and sweethearts. Back home to farms, mines and factories. Back home, as civilians in a world of peace. The men who had fought for abstract things like freedom and democracy, tolerance and justice on lonely jungle islands now faced the task of finishing the fight for these things in a civilian world, where greed and prejudice, bigotry and intolerance threatened to win the peace. The fighting was over; the victory was still to be won.

The 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry had Campaign Credits as follows:

**INDIAN WARS, ARIZONA 1866**  
**WORLD WAR I**  
**WORLD WAR II**  
**NEW GUINEA CAMPAIGN, with Arrowhead for amphibious**  
**landing in the face of the enemy**  
**Bismark Archipelago**  
**Luzon, with Arrowhead for amphibious landing in the face of the enemy.**

Back in Arizona little time was lost. The 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry answered the bugle call again as the Regimental Headquarters and Headquarters Company was reactivated in the Arizona Army National Guard at Tucson, Arizona on February 18, 1947. Colonel Frederick R. Stofft was separated from service on 27 May 1946, returned to Arizona and became commanding officer, 158<sup>th</sup> Regimental Combat Team on the date of reactivation. Stofft enlisted in Headquarters and Headquarters Detachment, 2d Battalion, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry in March 1929 as a Private. Appointed Second Lieutenant, Infantry in May 1930, he entered into Federal Service on 16 September 1940 as a Captain, Regimental Adjutant, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry. Aide-de-camp to Lieutenant General Walter Kreuger, Commanding General, 3d Army, Commanded the 2d Battalion, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry on Panama, Australia and Dutch New Guinea. Combat on New Britain Island, Wadke Sarmi, Dutch New Guinea and amphibious landing on Noemfoor Island 1944. Promoted to Colonel September 1945 commanded the 127<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment, 32d Infantry (Red Arrow) Division in the invasion of the Philippines and liberation of Manila.

In the decade after World War II, millions of Federal and State funds were expended to give the Guard modern and adequate armories in communities throughout the State of Arizona. The regiment was twice reorganized under new streamlined concepts. The Distinctive Unit Insignia (DUI) of this great Arizona Regiment was appropriately the Arizona Gila Monster, paired left and right, worn with the head facing to the front. The motto of the regiment was aptly the Spanish word "Cuidado", meaning "Take Care."

With the reallocation of National Guard troops to the State of Arizona, the 480th Field Artillery Battalion (105mm Howitzer) (Towed) was allocated to the National Guard of Arizona as an integral part of the 158th Regimental Combat Team. On 15 August 1946 the 480th Field Artillery Battalion was constituted and its Headquarters was federally Recognized 9 July 1947 at Mesa, Arizona. Lieutenant Colonel Winfield R. Reindle was assigned as Commander on 16 May 1947. Colonel Reindel entered on Active Duty on 16 September 1940 with the 156<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion and served throughout the European Theater of Operations both as a Field Artillery Battalion Commander and Infantry Battalion Commander. He was released from Active Duty on 17 May 1946 at Fort Dix, New Jersey. He resigned from the Arizona National Guard on 11 December 1947 and died at the Veterans Hospital in Phoenix, Arizona on 23 September 1956 from Brain Cancer.

Serving under Colonel Reindel as Executive Officer was Major John J. Rhodes. Rhodes entered the U. S. Army Air Corps 5 September 1941 and was discharged at Williams Field, Chandler, Arizona on June 28, 1946. He was assigned as Executive Officer until 27 July 1948 when he was transferred to Headquarters and Headquarters Detachment, Arizona Army National Guard as Staff Judge Advocate. Rhodes was promoted to Colonel and remained with the Arizona National Guard until he was elected as a Republican to the Eighty-third and to the fourteen succeeding United States Congresses (January 3, 1953-January 3, 1983); minority leader (Ninety-third through Ninety-sixth Congresses); was not a candidate for reelection in 1982 and returned to the practice of law in Mesa. He transferred to the United States Army Reserve after his election to the U. S. Congress and served in that capacity until his transfer to the Retired Reserve as Colonel, Judge Advocate General Corps, upon attaining 20 years military service.

With the resignation of Lieutenant Colonel Reindel, Major Jackson Bogle was reassigned from Battalion Executive Officer to Commander, 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion on 15 June 1949. He was commissioned from ROTC at Iowa State College on 1 June 1942, entered Active Duty at Fort Sill, Oklahoma on 16 August 1942. Major Bogle served as an instructor at the Field Artillery School and with a Pack Artillery Battalion in the China Burma India Theater, operating with the Chinese Army. He was discharged from Active Duty on 7 February 1946 at Fort Sheridan, Illinois.

The 480th Field Artillery Battalion inherited the history, and battle honors successively of Battery B, 1st Field Artillery Regiment, Battery E, 158th Field Artillery, and Battery B, 207th Field Artillery Battalion. Battle Honors inherited by the Battalion is as follows:

World War II, NORTHERN FRANCE  
World War II, CENTRAL EUROPE  
World War II, RHINELAND

On 25 May 1952, Frank E. Fraser was appointed Adjutant General upon the Death of General Tuthill. General Fraser enlisted in Troop B, 1<sup>st</sup> Cavalry, Washington National Guard on 12 March 1915. He served on the Mexican Border with the Guard until 1917 when his unit was integrated into the 41<sup>st</sup> Infantry Division. During World War I, Fraser served overseas in France, Belgium, Luxembourg and in the Army of Occupation in Germany.

In 1919, Fraser moved to Arizona and upon leaving the Organized Reserve Corps in 1926, organized and commanded a unit of the National Guard of Arizona at Ray, Arizona, where he resided. Prior to World War II, he held many posts in the command and staff of the National Guard of Arizona. Inducted with the National Guard of Arizona on 16 September 1940, General

Fraser commanded a motor convoy, transporting guard personnel to Fort Sill, Oklahoma, which at that time was the longest motor march ever made by the National Guard.

During World War II, he served on the General Staff of the 45<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division and the Third Army and at one time was the liaison Officer for U. S. Army Europe, to the British War Office and to Allied Governments in exile. He accompanied the Fifth Armored Division in the liberation of Luxembourg, where he had served during World War I, and was assigned as Military Governor of liberated Luxembourg. He was the first officer to be given such a post by General Eisenhower. At the end of the war he returned to Arizona and served as Executive Officer of the Arizona National Guard until he was appointed Adjutant General.

His major decorations included the Legion of Merit with Oak Leaf Cluster, Bronze Star Medal, French Legion of Honor, Military Order of the British Empire, French Croix de Guerre with Palms, Belgian Order of Leopold, Belgian Croix de Guerre with Palms, Luxembourg Grand Officer, Order of Adolphe of Nassau; Luxembourg Commander, Order of Couronne de Chene, Luxembourg Croix de guerre with Palm, Luxembourg Fourragere and the Luxembourg, Grand Cross, Order of Merit. Back in Arizona he served as honorary counsel for Luxembourg for Arizona and New Mexico.

While researching General Fraser's Military Personnel File, it contained an interesting interview with General Fraser by Dr. John W. Kennedy, on June 23, 1958, regarding General Tuthill's military career. Excerpts from this interview are quoted herein, the full interview is sixteen pages and may be found in his Personnel Records.

**Kennedy:** You said you had some indirect association with Dr. Tuthill, but in 1919 your direct association started. How was that?

**Fraser:** Yes, I came to Arizona in December 1919. During World War I at Cantigny, I wasn't hit by a shell but knocked flat by the concussion and had a little gas from a gas shell. It didn't bother me too much because someone adjusted my mask again. Nevertheless I did come up with a tendency to have sore throats. I came down here to grow cotton and was offered employment by the Southwest Cotton Company by a man named Parsons. I said before I do anything I want to get my throat taken care of. He said, well there is a very fine doctor who just came down from Clifton, by the name of Tuthill, he is in the Goodrich Building. I would suggest that you go down and see him. So I went to the office and he was on the phone raising the deuce with someone who was asking him to intercede to have a draft dodger brought back from across the border, who had taken refuge in Mexico. So he hung up, and only in the manner that we know, he never used profanity as profanity, but he was really burned up on this occasion, so he turned around and said to me, "what is the matter with you skinny?" I was wearing a dark suit and in my lapel I had three gold chevrons. He said, "overseas, huh?" And I said, yes. I didn't recognize him as the General that I had been told to walk by very carefully in 1918. So we chewed the rag a little bit and then he treated my throat and he said, "It's not bad but I would watch it though" and he prescribed something for it. As I went out of his office, we have a duplicate of the picture here, it showed this man in uniform with General Pershing and others. I looked at the picture and there was a man in a tin hat, and then I looked down the hall and saw the same man, so I asked the receptionist about it. She said, yes he was a General in World War I and I said, was it made up of Colorado and Arizona fellows? She said "I don't know but I think it was." Later on I hooked two and two together and during that particular period in 1918 he was called "Old Iron Pants." He was training replacements and also had charge of the defenses around headquarters around Toul. He was stationed actually at Bar-Le-Duc, near General Pershing's headquarters or what we term GHQ or General Headquarters. People that he worked with when they left his jurisdiction were very well trained people.

**Kennedy:** What General Pershing wrote in commendation, certainly bears out what you say.

**Fraser:** Well, General Tuthill and his 79<sup>th</sup> Brigade had the highest, I guess, rating of any training Brigade in the whole United States Army, whether it was National Guard, Reservists or Regular Army. The General has always been a stickler for training and he had a moral that I think others

have adopted, in both the Regular Service and out of the Regular Service, that your Army is only as good as its corporals.

**Kennedy:** \* \* \* Do you have any characteristic anecdotes or behaviors that the General exhibited, which everybody remembers?

**Fraser:** \* \* \* Many times he would go through a training area and halt the training and point out that if he as the enemy he would do such and so and what would happen then.

On one occasion I recall at Flagstaff at the confluence of the Lake Mary-Fort Tuthill road, it is now called Alt. 89, he assembled all of the officers as that particular training period was sloppy. It was below standard and the senior Army instructor at that time was Major William G. Weaver, a West Pointer, \* \* \*, but he was a stickler. We called him "Blinky Bill." He was a hero of World War I. It was he that really gave the Third Division the title that it so proudly wears of "Rock of the Marne." General Weaver commanded the 8<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division in World War II. \* \* \* This was the final day of the field maneuvers, now we were to have a critique, the General made it very plain that it was way below his expectations. \* \* \* Without further adieu Tuthill said, "It is so low in the training index that we have established here down through the years, I expect to have the resignations of three and perhaps four officers on my desk when I return to Phoenix. I'll be in Phoenix, as you know, next Monday. I need not go into details at this particular moment, but I think the three officers realize who I am referring to. They have not proved themselves fit to remain in command of units of the National Guard of Arizona." Three of them did resign, but one of those he had particularly referred to did not resign. The General sent a telegram to him to the effect that his resignation had been accepted, signed A. M. Tuthill.

His comments to a new officer was explained in part by General Fraser, " \* \* \* You are an officer and an officer is on a pedestal, he must be able to do it better than any man in his company, everything, he can either climb a mountain or a tree or a ladder, he must be able to shoot better, or he must ride better, or he must crawl better, he must dig a ditch better. \* \* \*"

Most of the activation of units in the Arizona Army National Guard after World War II occurred during the years 1947 - 1949 with only minor reorganizations, adjustments and tweaking of the troop units through the Korean War and post war years. No Army units of the Arizona Guard were mobilized for the Korean War, but the artillery and other units did lose major pieces of equipment, which were turned in and shipped to the South Korean Army. The organization of the Army Guard in 1955 consisted of 246 Officers, 27 Warrant Officers and 2380 Enlisted Men in the units indicated.

Organization	Station	Commander
Headquarters National Guard Arizona	Phoenix	MG Frank E. Fraser
Hq & Hq Detachment, NG Az	Phoenix	1LT Kenneth W. Hunter
3666 <sup>th</sup> Ordnance Co	Phoenix	CPT Lester L. McCartney
108 <sup>th</sup> Army Band	Phoenix	CWO Jesse A. Sedberry
213 <sup>th</sup> Engineer Combat Co	Globe-Miami	CPT Faust Rabogliatti
158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment		COL Frederick R. Stofft
Hq & Hq Co, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry	Tucson	CPT Joel C. White, Jr.
Service Co	Phoenix	CPT Hector B. Andrade
Tank Co	Tucson	CPT Cealon B. Taylor
Heavy Mortar Co	Glendale	CPT William E. Bierer
Medical Co	Phoenix	MAJ Donald M. Bramwell
1 <sup>st</sup> Battalion, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry		MAJ Charles P. Gibson
Hq & Hq Co, 1 <sup>st</sup> Battalion	Tucson	1LT Gordon E. Nelson
Company A	Nogales	CPT Pierre S. Baffert
Company B	Tucson	CPT Alfred B. Hobbs
Company C	Douglas	1LT Maneul Y. Durazo

<b>Company D</b>	<b>Warren-Bisbee</b>	<b>CPT James M. King</b>
<b>2d Battalion, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry</b>		<b>LTC Norman L. Erb</b>
<b>Hq &amp; Hq Co, 2d Battalion</b>	<b>Phoenix</b>	<b>CPT Truman D. West</b>
<b>Company E</b>	<b>Phoenix</b>	<b>1LT David S. Perez</b>
<b>Company F</b>	<b>Phoenix</b>	<b>CPT Augustine M. Trujillo</b>
<b>Company G</b>	<b>Safford</b>	<b>CPT Harold P. Porter</b>
<b>Company H</b>	<b>Kingman</b>	<b>CPT Alexander E. Vaughan</b>
<b>3d Battalion, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry</b>		<b>LTC Felix J. Bertino</b>
<b>Hq &amp; Hq Co, 3d Battalion</b>	<b>Prescott</b>	<b>1LT Harry L. Gale</b>
<b>Company I</b>	<b>Flagstaff</b>	<b>1LT Richard H. Mellor</b>
<b>Company K</b>	<b>Sunnyslope</b>	<b>1LT Karl K. Kitchen</b>
<b>Company L</b>	<b>Yuma</b>	<b>CPT Millard E. Fourt</b>
<b>Company M</b>	<b>Coolidge</b>	<b>CPT Sigmund Liberman</b>
<b>480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion</b>		<b>LTC Jackson Bogle</b>
<b>Hq &amp; Hq Battery</b>	<b>Mesa</b>	<b>1LT John K. Harmon</b>
<b>Service Battery</b>	<b>Mesa</b>	<b>CPT Robert B. Kellis</b>
<b>Medical Detachment</b>	<b>Mesa</b>	<b>CPT Robert H. Lewis</b>
<b>Battery A</b>	<b>Chandler</b>	<b>CPT Raul G. Navarrete</b>
<b>Battery B</b>	<b>Casa Grande</b>	<b>1LT John L. Johnson</b>
<b>Battery C</b>	<b>Tempe</b>	<b>CPT Chester A. Smith, Jr</b>

Lieutenant Colonel Jackson Bogle was transferred from Commander, 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion, to Field Artillery Staff Officer, Headquarters and Headquarters Detachment, Arizona Army National Guard, on 24 November 1955. He was promoted to Colonel and continued to serve in that rank in the Army National Guard and U. S. Army Reserve until 16 January 1969 when he was appointed Adjutant General, Arizona National Guard.

Major Robert E. Ham was promoted to Lieutenant Colonel and reassigned from Operations and Training Officer to Commander, 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion. Colonel Ham enlisted in Battery E, 2d Battalion, 158<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Regiment, Mesa, Arizona on 1 July 1940 and was inducted into Federal service with the unit in September of 1940. Following enlisted service with the battalion in Texas and Panama, he was graduated from Officer Candidate School at Fort Sill, Oklahoma in August 1942, and commissioned a Second Lieutenant. As an officer, he saw service through World War II in Europe, from Normandy through Northern France and the Rhineland. Discharged from Active Duty in 1946, he rejoined the Arizona Army National Guard in the 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion in 1949.

Colonel Frederick R. Stofft was assigned as Assistant Adjutant General, Army, Arizona National Guard on 15 June 1956 and appointed Brigadier General on 10 June 1957. Colonel Charles W. Fernald was reassigned from Executive Officer to Commanding Officer, 158<sup>th</sup> Regimental Combat Team, on 16 June 1956. Fernald began his military career when he enlisted as a Private in the California National Guard on 13 August 1934. Commissioned a Second Lieutenant, Infantry, on 16 July 1942 upon graduation from Infantry Officer Candidate School, Fort Benning, Georgia. Colonel Fernald served as Operations and Training Officer and Commander of the 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, 413<sup>th</sup> Infantry, 104<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, in the European Theater of Operation with campaigns in Northern France, Rhineland and Central Germany. He was released from Active Duty on 22 October 1945 and Joined the United States Army Reserve in California. He joined the Arizona Army National Guard on 27 June 1947, assigned as Commander, 3d Battalion, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry and reassigned Executive Officer 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry on 31 January 1956.

Lieutenant General Frank E. Fraser requested and was placed on the Retired List, National Guard of Arizona on 30 September 1958. On 1 June 1965, the Governor approved Senate Joint Resolution Number 2, Twenty-seventh Legislature, Second Special Session, authorizing the Adjutant General of the State of Arizona to present a "State of Arizona Medal of Honor" with an

appropriate Citation to Lieutenant General Frank Edwin Fraser as a testimonial of the people of the State of Arizona for his many years of faithful service to the State and Nation.

Colonel John C. Wilson was appointed Major General, National Guard of Arizona, on October 1, 1958, and sworn in as The Adjutant General of Arizona by the Honorable Ernest W. McFarland, Governor of Arizona. General Wilson enlisted in Company B, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry, Buckeye and was commissioned a Second Lieutenant two years later, he subsequently became commander of the company. Wilson assisted in drafting a mobilization plan for the State of Arizona. While serving in the State Legislature, prior to World War II, he took the initiative in drafting legislation to cope with emergencies that might arise. His planning facilitated activation of Selective Service for Arizona.

At the outset of World War II he was assigned to Luke Field, Arizona, as a Captain, Base Adjutant from 1941 to 1943. In February 1942 he attended the Combat Intelligence School, University of Maryland, Command and General Staff College, Intelligence Course, Fort Leavenworth, Kansas. In May 1943 he was reassigned to Rosewell, New Mexico where he served as Provost Marshal and Base Executive Officer. In October 1943 he was transferred to Biggs Field, El Paso, Texas where he served as Executive officer of the Base and Director of Administration and Services, then to Dalhart, Texas and Great Bend, Kansas for supervision of reactivation of the 19<sup>th</sup> Bombardment Group. Appointed Lieutenant Colonel on April 20, 1944. He departed for Guam on December 7, 1944, as Executive Officer of the 19<sup>th</sup> Bombardment Group, 20<sup>th</sup> Air Force. With the 19<sup>th</sup> Bombardment Group he participated in the first fire raid over Nagoya in 1945. Separated in 1946 as a Lieutenant Colonel he took an active part in the reactivation of the Guard, taking a reduction in rank in order to serve again. Wilson was assigned successively as Judge Advocate General and Inspector General for both Army and Air matters, becoming a Colonel in June 1954.

The major tactical reorganization to meet the new Army organization began in 1956 when the first Pentomic Divisions and Missile Commands were set up to furnish the mobile units and fire support deemed necessary for nuclear war. The old triangular infantry and airborne divisions were replaced by an organization consisting of five battle groups, each a self-contained force capable of independent operations. The 158<sup>th</sup> Regimental Combat Team was reorganized as the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade (Sep) on 1 March 1959 under the Pentomic Division organization with two battle groups instead of their traditional three regiments. Brigadier General Frederick R. Stofft was transferred to Commanding General of the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade on 29 June 1959. Colonel Charles W. Fernald was reassigned to Assistant Adjutant General Army, Arizona National Guard, and promoted to Brigadier General. The reorganization to Battle Groups created significant changes since the troop units were consolidating from three Battalions to two Battle Groups. The total maximum organizational strength authorized by this reorganization was 153 Officers, 8 Warrant Officers and 2056 Enlisted men in the authorized units below.

New Unit	Old Unit	Location	Commander
Hqs National Guard Az	Same	Phoenix	MG John C. Wilson
Hq & Hq Det, NG Az	Same	Phoenix	CPT Kenneth W. Hunter
3666 <sup>th</sup> Ord Co (DS)	3666 <sup>th</sup> Ord Co (FM)	Phoenix	CPT Wilber T. Joplin
108 <sup>th</sup> Army Band	Same	Phoenix	CW3 Jesse A. Sedberry
Fed Recognition W/D	820 Engr Co (FB)	Yuma	CPT Theodore A. Wendland
222d Trans Co (Lt Trk)	819 <sup>th</sup> Engr Co	Winslow	CPT James L. Curtis, Jr
258 <sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade		Phoenix	BG Frederick R. Stofft
HHC, 258 Infantry Bde	Hqs, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry Med Co, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry	Phoenix	CPT Richard A. Colson
1 <sup>st</sup> Battle Group, 158 <sup>th</sup> Combat Arms Regiment		Phoenix	LTC Corman L. Erb
HHC 1 <sup>st</sup> Battle Group	HHC 2d Bn, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Phoenix	CPT Frank S. Schaffer, Jr
Co A (-1 Rifle Plt)	Co I, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry	Flagstaff	1LT Kenneth A. Swift
Rifle Plt, Company A	Co M, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry	Kingman	1LT Robert A. McCleve
Co B (-1 Rifle Plt)	Co K, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry	Sunnyslope	CPT Robert K. Currey

Rifle Plt, Company B	HHC, 3d Bn, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Prescott	1LT Howard M. Bassett
Company C	Co E, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry	Phoenix	CPT William T. Auten
Co D (- Rifle & Wpns Plt)	Co F, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry	Phoenix	1LT Roy D. Hugh
Rifle and Wpns Plt, Co D	213 <sup>th</sup> Engr Co (Cmbt)	Globe	CPT Faust Robogliatti
Company E	Co L, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry	Yuma	CPT Charles W. Upchurch
Combat Support Co	Hvy Mort Co, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Glendale	CPT William T. Moroney
2d Battle Group, 158 <sup>th</sup> Combat Arms Regiment		Tucson	MAJ Leon R. Brown
HHC, 2d Battle Group	HHC Co, 1st Bn 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Tucson	CPT Harold W. Johnson
Company A	Hq Co, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry		
Company B	Company G, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Safford	CPT Bryce A. Sanders
Company C	Company D, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Warren	CPT George A. Wood
Co D (-1 Rifle Plt)	Company C, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Douglas	CPT Jose M. Diaz
Rifle Plt, Co D	Company A, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Nogales	CPT Daniel Uribe
Co E (-1 Rifle Plt)	Company B, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Tucson	1LT Joe R. Alvarez
Rifle Plt, Co E	Company H, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Coolidge	1LT Jack H. Calloway
Combat Support Co	New Organization	Casa Grande	(No record)
	Tank Co, 158 <sup>th</sup> Infantry	Tucson	CPT William C. Macey, Jr
*3d Howitzer Battalion, 158 <sup>th</sup> Combat Arms Regiment		Mesa	LTC Robert E. Ham
HHC, 3d How Bn, 158 CAR	HHC, 480 <sup>th</sup> FA Battalion	Mesa	CPT James H. Lewis
Btry A, 3/158 CAR	Btry A, 480 <sup>th</sup> FA Bn	Chandler	CPT Floyd V. Fuller
Btry B, 3/158 CAR	Btry B, 480 <sup>th</sup> FA Bn	Casa Grande	1LT Charles A. Hall
Btry C, 3/158 CAR	Btry C, 480 <sup>th</sup> FA Bn	Tempe	CPT Emmett C. Aepli
Sv Btry, 3/158 CAR	Sv Btry, 480 <sup>th</sup> FA Bn	Mesa	CPT Raul G. Navarrete
Med Det, 3/158 <sup>th</sup> CAR	Med Det, 480 <sup>th</sup> FA Bn	Mesa	CPT John E. McCarville

(\*Orders designating the Field Artillery Battalion as 3d Howitzer Battalion, 158<sup>th</sup> Combat Arms Regiment, later revoked, new designation 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery. The 3d Howitzer Battalion, 158<sup>th</sup> Combat Arms Regiment officially never existed.)

As noted in the above reorganization, the 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion remained an organic element of the regiment until it was reorganized as the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade. At that time the artillery battalion reorganized under the Combat Arms Regimental System (CARS) and re-designated as the 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery (155mm) (Towed). The battalion traded in their 105's and was issued 155mm howitzers along with 5-ton cargo trucks as prime movers.

The reorganization changed the tactical mission of the artillery battalion from that of "Direct Support" to "General Support", Corps Artillery. The Modified Table of Organization and Equipment (MTO&E) for the battalion reflected this change of mission, eliminating liaison sections, forward observer sections, battery survey sections and numerous other sections and functions required in the direct support role to the infantry. The loss of these sections further increased the loss within the battalion by reducing the number of officers from forty-eight to thirty two, e.g., firing batteries from eight officers to three and on the battalion staff, the loss of three captain liaison officers, etc. Negotiations with the National Guard Bureau (NGB) did produce the authorization of one forward observer in each firing battery to meet the training needs of the battalion.

Lieutenant Colonel Robert E. Ham requested transfer to the United States Army Reserve and Major William A. Jones, Executive Officer was promoted to Lieutenant Colonel and assigned as Commander, 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery, on 1 November 1960. Colonel Jones enlisted as a Private on 7 June 1937 in Battery E, 158<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery, Mesa. Mobilized with the Arizona Army National Guard in September 1940, he was serving as a Master Sergeant before attending Artillery Officers Candidate School. Graduated as Second Lieutenant from Officer Candidate School on 9 December 1943, he served in the Caribbean Command from 1 January 1942 until 6 July 1943, Asiatic-Pacific Theater 2 August 1945 to 5 December 1945. His service includes Battery Commander, Battalion Staff Officer and Operations and Training Officer (S3).

## **White Plan, Fire Support System**

On 15 June 1961 the 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery participated in field operations in support of the Army's mission to develop, design and test, tactical Automatic Data Processing Systems (ADPS) for the Field Army for the period 1960-1965 and 1965-1970. The live fire exercise demonstration of the White Plan, Fire Support Subsystem, was conducted at Fort Huachuca, Arizona. The areas of effort, which the White Plan was directed to develop, were in the fields of Personnel and Administration, which included items such as Military Pay, Personnel Accounting; Command, and Operations; Logistics and Intelligence. The White Plan was to demonstrate a major portion of the Fire Support Subsystem and to prove the basic design concepts as an element in the field of Command and Operations. The Fire Support Subsystem was the only area demonstrated by the 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery. U. S. Army Electronic Proving Ground (USAEPG) and the U.S. Army Artillery and Missile School (USAAMS), Fort Sill, Oklahoma controlled and supervised this White Plan exercise. Although the Fire Support Subsystem was the initial and successful demonstration of these applications, many obstacles still faced the Army in the final development and issue of hardware to provide this capability down to the using unit level.

The USAAMS Final Report acknowledged the participation of the 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery and further recognized that it was the first organic battalion size unit in the U.S. Army to conduct live fire missions and massing of fires, utilizing computer generated firing data. The 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery readily accepted this opportunity to participate in the firing demonstration of the Fire Support Subsystem. It was recognized as an outstanding field exercise and training vehicle for all elements of the battalion. Efforts toward the successful accomplishment of the demonstration mission required that the USAEPG and USAAMS Project Teams conduct it as a limited tactical situation, for control and evaluation purposes.

The initial White Plan, Fire Support Subsystem exercise was conducted on 13 October 1960 utilized two partial batteries. These consisted of only four 105mm howitzers and two 155mm howitzers. The high visibility of the White Plan caused the demonstration to be conducted in a simulated type exercise with various normal artillery activities established in a conference room, computer room, meteorological station at Libby Army Air Field and the firing elements in the field. All of these activities were networked by closed circuit TV, including the target area. Messengers were utilized to rush selected printouts to the conference room. For simplicity, the forward observer and target area was previously surveyed. However, the system provided for locating a series of forward observers by map inspection and updating coordinates as the field survey continued. The demonstration aspect of this exercise required the computer room to be staffed with personnel considerably in excess of the staffing expected for a fieldable computer facility. In addition to the normal complement of IBM 709 Computer operating personnel there were:

- a. IBM maintenance personnel
- b. TV crew
- c. Messengers
- d. Teletype operators (for receipt of meteorological messages)
- e. An input operator (for converting messages to computer language)
- f. The contractor programmer
- g. The contractor systems analyst
- h. The survey party sergeant
- i. The "S-3" officer in charge

The use of Fort Huachuca as an Annual Training Site by the 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery provided an excellent vehicle for a follow-on demonstration of the Fire Support Subsystem with a full MTO&E 155mm howitzer battalion in a normal field environment. Already identified as one of the top field artillery battalions in the Reserve Components, the battalion was determined by USAAMS to be an ideal unit to validate the previous survey and fire control demonstration results.

In preparation for the exercise, the battalion conducted calibration firing to establish the muzzle velocity for each weapon. Howitzers were re-distributed within the batteries to consolidate the "long shooting" and "short shooting" weapons and to establish battery "mean muzzle velocities" for accuracy and effect on the targets. The battalion occupied firing positions on the West Range to reduce the travel and communications distance between firing units and the IBM 709 computer room located in the USAEPG Headquarters.

Pending the fielding of a computer by the Army, which might be employed at battalion echelon, the IBM 709 Computing System was used in all firing demonstrations conducted at USAEPG, Fort Huachuca. The battalion did not participate in demonstration for Fire Planning, Ammunition Status Reporting or Nuclear Fires.

#### Sequence of events.

- a. Selection of positions. The Battery Commander (BC) parties were moved to the exercise area by MAJ Robert M. Brown, Battalion S-3. Firing positions were identified and reconnaissance parties laid out the position areas and prepared to receive the batteries.
- b. Positioning of the batteries. The Executive Officer, MAJ Robert H. Lewis, moved the battalion from the post motor park to the firing position area. The batteries occupied their selected positions and the firing batteries reported when ready to fire.
- c. Captain James H. Lewis and the communications sections established normal radio and wire communication nets. Two additional external wire lines were installed to the range control (Mag) lines for communications to Range Central and the computer room.
- c. First Lieutenant Bobbie L. Nickell, Reconnaissance & Survey Officer and the Survey Sections completed the field survey prior to the demonstration exercise. This early survey was necessary to meet the time schedule for the submission of field data within exercise time phase-lines to the IBM 709.
- e. IBM Control Room personnel entered "set-up data" in computer (subsequent powder temperatures entered as received)
- f. The receipt and processing of Polar Plot Fire Request from Forward Observer. Fire mission was fired as "fire for effect mission", no adjustments by Forward Observers.
- g. Receipt of meteorological message and entry in computer for subsequent missions.
- h. The receipt and input of survey field notes, conversion to machine language and computation of surveyed coordinates.
- i. Initial fire at known target.
- j. Massed fire, time-on-target, known target.
- k. (Afternoon). Re-firing of last target, using morning meteorological data and powder temperature.
- l. Entering afternoon meteorological data and powder temperature in computer.
- m. Massed fire, time-on-target, same target.
- n. Demonstration fire missions were completed in the early afternoon and ammunition was still available in the firing batteries. Captain John L. Johnson, Battalion Fire Direction Officer, questioned the ADPC and USAAMS Project Officers regarding their capabilities for

conducting a "target of opportunity" observer adjusted fire mission. They indicated they had not planned, nor even conducted a simulated observer adjusted fire mission, but were sure they could provide the manual input for the computer to develop the firing data. Johnson notified the Battalion Fire Direction Center to contact Captain Chester A. Smith, Jr., Liaison Officer and instruct him to have one of the forward observers submit a target of opportunity, "will adjust" mission. The mission was fired, with the battalion firing three volleys in effect. The successful completion of this mission was recorded as the first ever observer adjusted mission fired by computer.

#### **Evaluation of Exercise.**

##### **a. Criterion of Exercise: First round accuracy**

**Results:** More often than not, this was achieved beyond the expectations of the user. This exercise had validated the previous results from the 1960 demonstration. However, much more firing would be required in order to evaluate conclusively the accuracy of the ballistic solution and data system employed in the exercise. This would hopefully be accomplished through the Orange and Red Plans.

##### **b. Criterion: More effective command**

**Results:** The Fire Direction Officer commanded the machine, not vice versa, and had no difficulty in assuming this role.

##### **c. Criterion: Reasonable manpower requirements**

**Results:** In general, the employment of a computer presented no real problem in the employment of personnel. Specifically:

- (1) Forward Observer – performed in normal manner, using approved voice communications.**
- (2) Battalion – no difficulty in receipt of Fire Orders. Range Safety Officer limits presented a problem for both computer and manual solutions.**
- (3) Survey – no problems after brief training in format of field notes required for computer input.**
- (4) Meteorological Section – no change in operations.**
- (5) Input preparation – improvement in adherence to formats established for computer equivalents of normal Artillery messages.**

##### **d. Criterion: Man-machine relationships**

**Results:** Control of operations and data was transferred between man and machine frequently without difficulty or delay. It should not be concluded that problems associated with the punched card inputs employed in this exercise will carry over to a fieldable system.

##### **e. Criterion: Operational speeds**

**Results:** The ballistic computations on the IBM 709, including input and output functions, are performed in a smaller time span than is required. The same applied to survey computations. Approximately the same speed is anticipated for the computers fielded. Significant time is saved when there is an accumulation of computational tasks, but the time saved for a single computation is not of great significance, except for "high order" survey. Accuracy is the more important factor.

**Conclusion.**

- a. It was concluded that this portion of the White Plan exercise served its purpose in showing the feasibility of ADP for the most significant portions of the functions associated with Fire Control.
- b. There was definite carry-over value of this Exercise in continuing the development of a total fieldable system in a field environment with fieldable equipment.
- c. There would be no substantial advantage in extending the simulation to extensive function not explored by this exercise. However, where alternatives exist for selected smaller tasks, it may prove profitable in time and money to test the alternatives by the simulative techniques, which now can be employed readily.

The 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery can be proud of their selection for participation in the validation exercise portion of the White Plan, Fire Support Subsystem. The survey and fire control functions utilized in this early demonstration of the adaptability of computer generated firing data for increased accuracy and speed of delivery capabilities remain constant. However, the procedures and proposed fielding of the early FADAC were only the forerunner of the equipment and capabilities that we find in the cannon artillery units of today. Being the first battalion size field artillery unit in the U.S. Army to conduct live fire utilizing computer generated data is an achievement that can never be recorded by any other organization in the long and proud history of cannon artillery.

Finally in 1961 after many conflicts and earlier confrontations over East and West Berlin and the Berlin Blockade, Premier Nikita Krushchev, shoe pounding Soviet Leader, felt confident enough to present the young President John F. Kennedy with a harsh ultimatum on Berlin and Germany. Previously Kennedy's Secretary of State, Dean Rusk, had stated publicly that the Americans were "Willing to fight for their rights in Berlin"; now as a result of Krushchev's ultimatum, Kennedy ordered an increased readiness level for Regular Army units and the call-up of selected National Guard and Reserve units. Among the units activated were the 161<sup>st</sup> Fighter Group, Arizona Air National Guard, Phoenix, and the 222d Transportation Company (Lt Trk), Arizona Army National Guard from Winslow, Commanded by CPT Michael D. Coffinger. The 222d Transportation Company (Lt Trk) served on Active Duty from 1 October 1961 to 11 August 1962 at Fort Ord, California.

A major reason for the Soviets pressure was the fact that thousands of East Germans were simply walking from East Berlin to West Berlin and then seeking a new home in West Germany or some other country. To stop people from leaving, the communists constructed the Berlin Wall, a concrete barrier separating West Berlin from East Berlin in August 1961.

The organization of the Arizona Army National Guard during the period 1961-1962 was composed of 198 Officers, 16 Warrant Officers and 2334 Enlisted Men in the following organizations.

Unit	Station	Commander
Headquarters Arizona Army Guard	Phoenix	MG John C. Wilson
Hq & Hq Detachment, ArizARNG	Phoenix	CPT Kenneth W. Hunter
123d PIO Detachment (Fld Svc)	Phoenix	CPT Jay Brasher
108 <sup>th</sup> Army Band	Phoenix	CW2 Myron W. Derbaum
222d Transportation Co (Lt Trk)(Active Duty)	Winslow (Fort Ord)	1LT Michael D. Coffinger
3666 <sup>th</sup> Ordnance Company (Dir Spt)	Phoenix	CPT Wilber T. Joplin
ArizARNG Military Academy (OCS/NCOS)	Phoenix	BG Charles W. Fernald
258 <sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade (Sep)		
Headquarters	Phoenix	BG Frederick R. Stofft
Hq & Hq Co	Phoenix	CPT Russell C. Hall

**1st Battle Group, 158th Infantry**

Headquarters	Phoenix	COL Norman L. Erb
Hq & Hq Detachment	Phoenix	CPT Neal E. Wagoner
Co A (-2d Rifle Plt)	Flagstaff	CPT John H. Allen
2d Rifle Plt, Company A	Kingman	1LT Richard E. Polley
Co B (-2d Rifle Plt)	Phoenix	1LT Keith D. Sprinkle
2d Rifle Plt, Company B	Prescott	2LT Lawrence T. Caulkins
Company C	Phoenix	1LT Robert B. Showers
Company D	Phoenix	CPT James E. Cleckner
Company E	Yuma	CPT Norbert J. Hoagland
Combat Support Company	Glendale	CPT Joseph J. Addison

**2d Battle Group, 158th Infantry**

Headquarters	Tucson	MAJ Joel C. White, Jr.
Hq & Hq Detachment	Tucson	CPT Joe R. Alvarez
Company A	Safford	1LT Alfredo B. Antillon
Company B	Bisbee	CPT Antonio A. Lugo
Company C	Douglas	CPT Chester A. Foster
Co D (-2d Rifle Plt)	Nogales	1LT Bobby H. Huysen
2d Rifle Plt, Company D	Tucson	1LT Robert C. Thomas
Co E (-3d Rifle Plt & Wpns Plt)	Coolidge	CPT Jack H. Calloway
3d Rifle Plt & Wpns Plt, Company E	Globe	2LT Osmund Fairfield
Combat Support Company	Tucson	CPT Jerry J. Tolle

**1st Howitzer Battalion, 180th Artillery**

Headquarters	Mesa	LTC William A. Jones
Hq & Hq Battery	Mesa	CPT Emmett C. Aepli
Service Battery	Mesa	CPT Albert K. Crandell
Battery A	Chandler	CPT Raul G. Navarrete
Battery B	Casa Grande	CPT Alvin J. Busby
Battery C	Tempe	CPT James S. Sturdevant

March 1, 1963 again saw reorganization of the Arizona Guard with the 1st and 2d Battle Groups being converted back to three Infantry Battalions. The 1st Howitzer Battalion, 180th Field Artillery was redesignated as a self-propelled 155-mm howitzer battalion, although the towed equipment had to be maintained as a substitute for self-propelled howitzers. HHC, 258th Separate Infantry Brigade, 3666th Ordnance Company, 222d Transportation Company (Lt Trk) and other Separate Companies/Detachments were only effected by minor update changes to their current Mobilization Table of Organization Equipment (MTOE). This reorganization structured the 258th Infantry Brigade as follows:

New Unit	Old Unit	Station
<b>1st Battalion, 158th Infantry</b>		
Hq & Hq Co, 1st Battalion	HQ & Hq Co, 2d BG	Tucson
Co A (-2d Rifle Plt)	Co D (-2d Rifle Plt) 2d BG	Nogales
2d Rifle Plt, Co A	2d Rifle Plt, Co D, 2d BG	Tucson
Co B (-2d,3d Rifle Plat & Wpns Plt)	Co E (-3d Rifle & Wpns Plt) 2d BG	Coolidge
2d, 3d Rifle Plat & Wpns Plt, Co B	Combat Support Co, 2d BG	Tucson
Co C (-2d Rifle Plt)	Company C. 2d BG	Douglas
2d Rifle Plt, Company C	Company B, 2d BG	Bisbee
<b>2d Battalion, 158th Infantry</b>		
Hq & Hq Company	Hq & Hq Company, 1st BG	Phoenix
Co A (-2d Rifle Plt)	Company A, 2d BG	Safford
2d Rifle Plt, Company A	3d Rifle & Wpns Plt, Co E, 2d BG	Globe
Company B	Company D, 1st BG	Phoenix
Company C	Company E, 1st BG	Yuma

**3d Battalion, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry  
Hq & Hq Company  
Co A (-2d Rifle Plt)  
2d Rifle Plt, Company A  
Co B (-2d Rifle Plt)  
2d Rifle Plt, Company B  
Company C**

**Combat Spt Company, 1<sup>st</sup> BG  
Co A (-2d Rifle Plt) 1<sup>st</sup> BG  
2d Rifle Plt, Company A, 1<sup>st</sup> BG  
Co B (-2d Rifle Plt), 1<sup>st</sup> BG  
2d Rifle Plt, Company B, 1<sup>st</sup> BG  
Company C, 1<sup>st</sup> BG**

**Glendale  
Flagstaff  
Kingman  
Phoenix  
Prescott  
Phoenix**

Brigadier General Frederick R. Stofft was transferred to Assistant Adjutant General Army and General Charles W. Fernald was reassigned to Commander 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade on 4 October 1962. General Stofft attained the age of 60 years on 31 May 1965 and retired from military service. Senate Joint Resolution Number 1, 27 May 1965, Authorized the Adjutant General of the State of Arizona to present a "State of Arizona Medal of Honor" with an appropriate Citation to Brigadier General Frederick R. Stofft as a testimonial of the people of the State of Arizona for his many years of faithful service to the State and the Nation. The fourth and only other recipient of the Arizona Medal of Honor would be (Chaplain) Father Albert Braun, an Arizona Priest who is credited with saving many soldiers lives after the fall of Corregidor during World War II. General Stofft would be further recognized by promotion to Major General, Arizona Army National Guard and on 12 May 1994 and promotion to Lieutenant General, Arizona Army National Guard, in recognition of his contributions to the National Guard of Arizona's high state of combat readiness and mission accomplishments that enhance the national defense posture and meet the need of the State of Arizona.

### **Desert Strike**

Desert Strike was a field training exercise in which two Joint Task Forces (JTF) opposed each other. The Exercise involved some 90,000 Army, Navy, Air Force and Marine personnel of the United States Strike Command. They maneuvered during the period 17-30 May 1964 in the desert area of Southern California-Arizona. This was the largest exercise in the United States in 1964 and the first major exercise in this area since World War II.

Not only was Desert Strike the largest U.S. Strike Command joint exercise to combine both Active and Reserve Component units up until that time, but was also considered the most successful. The exercise was in fact, "Colorado River War II" to the Arizona Army National Guard. The first aptly named "The Dam'est War" by Colonel Ivan Pomeroy, commander of the task force ordered to the Colorado River in 1934 by Arizona Governor Benjamin Mouer to stop the construction of the Parker Dam.

Realism was the keynote of any USSTRICOM exercise. A hypothetical situation was created for Exercise Desert Strike, with two principal countries established, Calonia on the west of the Colorado River and Nezona on the east. With the Colorado as the international border between the two major powers, the border between the two countries extends from Mexico through the maneuver area to Las Vegas, Nevada, and from there north to another hypothetical neutral country.

The two countries had been quarreling for years over water rights in the Colorado River water shed south of Las Vegas. Ten years ago, the United Nations intervened in the dispute and established a ten-mile demilitarized zone around Parker and Davis Dams and this controlled the flow of water in an attempt to appease both countries.

Nezona became discontented with its share of water and threatened to seize the Parker and Davis Dams and the western portion of the Colorado River water shed. This area forms the State of Mojave, a part of Calonia. Mojave was a portion of Nezona prior to World War I and therefore Nezona felt justified in attempting to retrieve Mojave. The United Nations attempted to negotiate a new water rights agreement between Calonia and Nezona, but had been unsuccessful.

Opposing forces are the Joint Task Force Phoenix on the Nezona side and Joint Task Force Mojave on the Calonia side.

#### Major Participating Units

##### Army Units

###### Joint Task Force Mojave

Commanded by Lieutenant General Charles B. Westover  
USAF, Deputy CINCAFSTRIKE

###### Hq XVIII Airborne Corps, Fort Bragg, NC

Commanded by Lieutenant General John Bowen

###### Hq 9<sup>th</sup> Air Force, Shaw AFB, SC

Commanded by Major General Marvin L. McNickle

###### 1<sup>st</sup> Armored Division, Fort Hood, TX

Commanded by Major General Harvey J. Jablansky

###### 2d Brigade, 40<sup>th</sup> Armored Division, ARNG California

Commanded by Colonel Alvin E. Howell

###### 5<sup>th</sup> Logistical Command, Fort Bragg, NC

Commanded by Colonel W. P. Pope

###### Joint Task Force Phoenix

Commanded by Lieutenant General Charles G. Dodge, USA

Commanding General, Fifth U.S. Army

###### Hq III Corps, Fort Hood, TX

Commanded by Lieutenant General Harvey H. Fischer

###### Hq 12<sup>th</sup> Air Force, Waco, TX

Commanded by Major General John C. Meyer

###### 2d Armored Division, Fort Hood, TX

Commanded by Major General Edwin H. Burba

###### 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division (Mech), Fort Carson, CO

Commanded by Major General John A. Heintges

###### 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade, ARNG Arizona

Commanded by Brigadier General Charles W. Fernald

###### 191<sup>st</sup> Infantry Brigade, USAR Montana, Utah, Arizona

Commanded by Brigadier General J. P. Connor

###### 1<sup>st</sup> Logistical Command, Fort Hood, TX

Commanded by Colonel Donald L. Thompson

###### Director Reserve

101<sup>st</sup> Airborne Division, Fort Campbell, KY

Commanded by Major General B. E. Powell

In total, the 9<sup>th</sup> and 12<sup>th</sup> Air Force comprised 13 tactical fighter wings, four assault airlift wings, an Aerial Reconnaissance Center and a Special Warfare Center. These Air Forces provided packages of tactical fighters, reconnaissance aircraft (with weather and electronic intelligence gathering equipment) and a globe circling assault airlift aircraft for response to any contingency. The force arrived combat-ready with sufficient supplies and equipment to sustain itself for 30 days. The 19<sup>th</sup> Air Force with headquarters at Seymour-Johnson AFB, North Carolina, was the planning and control headquarters for AFSTRIKE's rapid reaction operations utilizing these forces.

Strike Command joint training, such as Exercise Desert Strike, was designed to put together the forces of well-trained ground and air units, and commands, in such a way that would get the maximum overall effect from the great combat power of the participating services. This exercise brought together a number of the best Active service, Reserve and National Guard ground and air units. The exercise was designed to show the realities of combat to the greatest degree possible in peacetime and without the use of live ammunition. Commanders were urged to enter into the

exercise enthusiastically, retain an open mind, exercise their initiative and imagination and exploit every form of mobility available.

Maneuvering elements as well as air force support had a wide range in which to operate. The exercise embraced some 13 million acres. The outstanding advantage of the maneuver area was the open country afforded maneuvering armored and mechanized divisions. Tactical Air Command fighters, reconnaissance and troop carrier squadrons were based at locations remote from the "battlefield" to provide a realistic situation such as would be present in actual combat, in any place in the world.

Headquarters USSTRICOM took to the field during the exercise and directed the training from a field headquarter at Needles, California. Since this was a semi-controlled exercise, there was no announced starting or ending date. The Joint Task Force's (JTF) were organized in the field and the assignment of participating units took place there. All forces in the exercise area and at operating bases outside the area were assigned to a JTF, Director Controller Headquarters or Neutral Forces.

Three of the four maneuvering divisions were physically located in the exercise area. The Fourth and the 101<sup>st</sup> Airborne Division were airlifted by the Military Air Transport Service to the vicinity of the area for employment when and as directed by the Director Headquarters. Strategic Air Command jet tankers were available for aerial refueling of fighter and reconnaissance aircraft to enable long distance air strikes.

Of special interest was the extensive use made of Army and Air Force Reserve Components in the exercise. The United States Continental Army Command (USCONARC) provided three separate brigades from the Reserve Components; two Army National Guard and one U.S. Army Reserve. The Air National Guard did participate with assigned missions.

When approached by the 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division (Mech) regarding the 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery's ability to support the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade in a Direct Support mission during Desert Strike, the battalion responded with a definite "affirmative" answer. Having served for twelve years with the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry while a Regimental Combat Team, plus providing liaison officer support to the brigade during annual training exercises after that, the battalion was familiar with their commanders and staff.

Further, the artillery commander and staff believed the experience of the officers and noncommissioned officers would allow the battalion to overcome the shortage of liaison and forward observer sections by doubling up some areas of responsibility, as additional duties. This would allow the battalion to furnish sufficient qualified personnel to meet the liaison officer and forward observer requirements. The battalion was fortunate in its assumed capability to accomplish this task, the average years of service for the officers in the battalion was fifteen years. The close relationship and familiarity within the officer corps of the battalion was a level probably never achieved in any other U.S. Army military unit. The officers knew each other's weaknesses, shortcomings and strengths; to some degree they could almost predict the reaction or action of an officer to a particular situation or crisis. To a somewhat lesser degree the same could be said about the familiarity with the senior commanders within the infantry brigade.

This exercise not only provided the opportunity for the artillery battalion to again train in a tactical field exercise with an infantry unit, but also the first ever occasions to maneuver as part of a larger field artillery organization such as the 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division Artillery (DivArty). Throughout the years the battalion had become accustomed to being told and rated by Active Army Evaluators, IG Inspectors and Advisors as one of the top artillery organizations within the Reserve Components. This exercise would allow them to serve alongside their active duty counterparts and finally evaluate their own performance against that of their peers. The well known tradition of the 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery to work hard, play hard and take pride in what you do well, was very much in evidence to the members of the battalion, as well as the U.S. Army Umpires and Evaluators throughout Desert Strike.

Units of the Arizona Army National Guard participating in Exercise Desert Strike departed home stations on Saturday, 9 May 1964. Southern Arizona units moved from home stations to bivouac in Glendale, Arizona on Friday, 8 May for the move with the main convoy of the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade. Advance detachments from the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry departed home stations on Thursday 7 May to the 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division (Mech) assembly area in the vicinity of Yucca, approximately 24 miles Southwest of Kingman on Interstate 40 (Needles). The 222d Transportation Company, commanded by Captain Mike Coffinger, was assigned in direct support of the Infantry Brigade. The 3666<sup>th</sup> Light Maintenance Company was attached to the 705<sup>th</sup> Maintenance Battalion, 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division (Mech), commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Patrick J. Breen.

The advance detachment for the 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery departed home station at 0001 hours, 7 May. Included in the advance detachment were Lieutenant Colonel William A. Jones, Battalion Commander, Captain John L. Johnson, Intelligence Officer and Captain Leo E. Mahoney, Communications Officer and Captain Richard D. Gehlback, Army Aviator. The detachment arrived at the bivouac site in the 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division Artillery assembly area located Northwest of Kingman. The area was approximately 4 miles West of the junction of US Highway 93 (Las Vegas) and State Route 68 (Bullhead City).

The Division Artillery assembly area was in Golden Valley that was made famous in Arizona real estate history. With vast expanses of desert land and weak law enforcement, land scam artists thrived. People such as Ned Warren, the godfather of Arizona land fraud, bought uninhabitable plots and sold them sight-unseen to unsuspecting residents of the eastern United States and Europe. The con man often sold the same plot to different buyers. There was speculation by the State Land Department that if every parcel that had been subdivided and sold in Mohave County were occupied, you could put the entire population of the United States there. His trial and conviction did cause Land Reform Laws to be passed by the Arizona Legislature, but regrettably this was too late for thousands who had lost their life savings for their future or retirement home in "beautiful" northern Arizona. The property had been advertised with developed roads and utilities available to each lot. The roads did exist, miles of them with road signs, all dirt and scrapped out of the desert with a road grader. Electrical service and one well were located right off State Route 68 ten to fifteen miles to the west towards Bullhead City and Davis Dam. The road network did make for an ideal location for the assembly area; it allowed the armored vehicles and artillery equipment to move into the area easy and without the total destruction of the arid desert.

The artillery units had a couple of friendly civilian neighbors to share their bivouac area with. They were landowners who had invested in this property, sight unseen, and spent all their money moving to this desert paradise to build their dream home. Those that came and couldn't afford to leave were now destitute and practically homeless, one couple was living in the old school bus they had driven to Arizona and another had built a little shack out of cardboard, tarpaper and anything else available for protection. They were using lanterns for lights and hauling water, can and bottle at a time. Of course, sanitation was non-existent without electric power or running water. Everyone felt sorry for these people, but if they survived, time did prove that the area would finally build up and prosper to some degree. If they didn't survive, one could only hope their descendants might have eventually recovered the family's original investment or even make a few dollars. Either way, it could not make up for the deprivation and sacrifice these people had to endure; Ned Warren probably had an easier and better lifestyle in the State Penitentiary at Florence, Arizona.

Unit convoys closed into their respective assembly areas on Saturday and established their bivouac site. Organizations improved their areas and established communications with higher headquarters and adjacent units. The 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade, 222 Transportation Company and 3666<sup>th</sup> Light Maintenance Company were required to borrow 251 pieces of equipment from guard units in seven other states. The equipment came from California, Utah, Oklahoma, Colorado, New Mexico, Texas and Arkansas. The Utah guard sent the largest compliment of 129 pieces, included was jeeps, trucks and other vehicles. Utah guardsmen drove the equipment to the Kingman armory for issue; members of the infantry brigade would return the equipment to Utah upon conclusion of the exercise.

The 161<sup>st</sup> Air Refueling Group, Arizona Air National Guard, flew in 16 jeeps with 106mm recoilless rifles from Oklahoma and signal equipment, 61mm mortars, trailers and generators from the other states. The United States Property and Fiscal Office (USPFO) Arizona, established an office in the Kingman armory to handle these and other local supply requirements. The Adjutant General's office also relocated a headquarters contingent to the armory. The State Staff Card Room was setup in the classroom on Saturday and declared operational for the duration of the exercise.

The artillery battalion had been long established as a "desert Rat" type organization, developed from their training drills in the desert at the Florence Military Reservation and annual training locations at Fort Huachuca and Yuma Proving Grounds, Arizona. Being creators of comfort while existing in the desert, the units already had or expanded the necessary field accessories to sustain their level of expectations in an extended exercise. Each battery was also blessed with a built-up kitchen truck from authorized Federal TDA funding for materials and constructed by unit personnel. Headquarters battery even installed a butane refrigerator in their Command Post (CP) Vehicle.

Service Battery constructed a mobile shower unit for annual training at Fort Huachuca, Arizona, in 1963. This unit was constructed for isolated unit type operations, where regular shower facilities were far and few between, or miles away. This shower unit more than proved it's worth throughout the later years, particularly at Yuma Proving Grounds, Arizona, where the artillery live fire exercise area (North Cibola Range) was sixty miles north of the post administrative area. This shower unit was constructed by "acquiring" two eight hundred-gallon aircraft refueling tanks from the 161<sup>st</sup> Air Refueling Group, Arizona Air National Guard. These tanks were those utilized aboard the KC-97 refueling aircraft, making them ideal for truck mounting. The tanks were manufactured with interior baffle plates so that their liquid contents would not create a safety hazard by sloshing around while on the move. The tanks were mounted parallel on a 5-ton truck with removable plumbing consisting of six showerheads.

During the second week of the exercise, General Fernald and his staff showed up for a "command visit" at the shower unit, and of course, take a shower. After the shower operator finished the on/off cycle for rinsing, Fernald requested more water. Specialist Four Martinez, the operator, remarked "get five more guys under the unit and I will." Martinez said later, "I didn't know who he was and I didn't see any stars tattooed on his back side." For those army units coming out of Fort Carson, Colorado, Fort Hood, Texas and Fort Bragg, North Carolina the Arizona/California desert was a new and unfamiliar world to them. They didn't realize that you could be soaking wet with perspiration during the day and be chilled by the rapidly dropping temperature of the high desert at night. This unfamiliarity with the deserts of the southwest was sadly evident from some of the thirty deaths that occurred during the exercise.

The 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division issued the Exercise Operations Plan (OPlan), Standing Operating Procedures (SOP) and Standing Operation Instructions/Standing Signal Instructions (SOI/SSI) to units attached for the exercise. Units familiarized their personnel with the Operations Plan and Division SOP. All officers and communications personnel were given training on the use of the Division SOI/SSI for the exercise. Coordination and liaison was initiated with both supporting and supported units. The artillery battalion was only authorized one liaison officer, with three MTOE augmented forward observers. This lack of liaison officers and forward observers to support the infantry brigade during the exercise was overcome with the reshuffling of duties and responsibilities within the battalion.

The Communications officer, Reconnaissance & Survey officer, Motor officer, Auto Maintenance Technician (Warrant Officer), Assistant Executive and Platoon Leader, Battery C and Personnel Technician (Warrant Officer) were all assigned as liaison officer or forward observers to the maneuver elements of the infantry brigade. The battalion survey sections were broken down and organized into teams to complete the liaison/forward observer sections with knowledgeable non-commissioned officers and driver-radio operators. There still were not an adequate number of forward observers to meet the infantry requirement, so the few were rotated among the units

depending on the combat mission of the battalions. Because of this shortage of observers, Captain Lewis, Service Battery Commander/S-4, had been requested to fly the river on a daily basis as an air observer in one of the artillery battalion's L-19 observation aircraft. His comment after flying these missions was "boy those fast moving Air Force burners up there can really shake up a little observation plane."

As diplomatic solutions to resolve the hostility between the two nations continued to deteriorate and war became more eminent, Nezona military forces conducted a night convoy movement to their forward rendezvous areas. Elements of the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade and 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery moved south from Yucca and west of the Black Mountains. East of Topock Junction, the units moved back to the north off Interstate 40 until they reached old Route 66 and then to their respective positions west of Oatman. This move placed the units in locations to either launch offensive operations against Calonia or counter an assault across the Colorado River by the enemy forces.

After occupying these positions, intelligence measures were stepped up and reconnaissance was initiated for forward firing positions to support a river crossing in the attack phase of the Division OPlan. The infantry brigade had directed the 3d battalion to establish a radio relay station atop one of the peaks of the Black Mountains. The relay station equipment and two enlisted men, SP5 Arthur E. Bader and Sp4 Ying Ong, both with Headquarters Company, 3d Battalion, were airlifted to the relay site by helicopter. During the course of their three day stay manning the radio site, a "Raven" helicopter, piloted by Captain Kelly Brewer from the brigade aviation platoon, crashed nearby while bringing them equipment and supplies. Captain Brewer escaped injury, but his aircraft was severely damaged and was airlifted from the mountain by another helicopter.

It was reported that during the night of 15 May, Calonia stopped arguing and sent troops by helicopter to occupy Parker and Davis dams, in the demilitarized zone supervised by a mythical international body, the Organization of Western States (OWS). All command headquarters received the coded message in the late night hours on Saturday 16 May that war had been declared and to implement the Division OPlan with a night river crossing, spearheaded by the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade on a front that extended six miles upstream from Needles, California.

Although all headquarters had received the coded message, some were unable to decipher it, didn't understand it or just didn't realize what it was. This late reaction created some problems for coordination of movement of units. The 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade was anchoring the left flank of the 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division with the 2d Armored Division on the south to Parker, Arizona. The artillery battalion and infantry battalions moved prior to daylight to their forward tactical positions and assembly areas for the scheduled assault across the river. In the glow of a full moon and clouds of choking dust raised by the rolling vehicles, the infantry units left their assembly area to move to the river. Trucks guided by the Military Police from the 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division and the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade carried huge pontoon bridge sections that were all headed for the same destination on the road to the river. Every silhouette that moved was a big one; if it wasn't trucks it was tanks or towering mobile cranes. Making a night move and setting up a tactical bivouac in total darkness, "is driving by the glow of blackout lights and pitching tents by braille," was the way one infantryman described a night move.

The initial elements of the infantry were across the river by pontoon after the enemy had reportedly destroyed the bridges at Topock, Arizona and Needles, California. The infantry brigade crossed the Colorado in three places before midnight on Sunday, 17 May. Company A, 3d Battalion, commanded by First Lieutenant Russell J. Smets, made the assault on the right flank of the brigade to secure the area where the engineers were to erect the float bridge. After Company A completed the assault, the entire 3d Battalion, commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Arthur A. Barnes, was deployed to protect the all important bridge site. In support of the infantry assault, the 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery pounded known and suspect enemy positions with more than 500 rounds in simulated fire missions. This road to the river and river crossing was no doubt a special page in the history of the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade. Their

World War II amphibious operations, as the 158<sup>th</sup> Regimental Combat Team, were amphibious landings on Japanese occupied islands in the Pacific.

Subsequent units and support elements movement across the river were delayed because the 5<sup>th</sup> Division Engineer Battalion did not have enough pontoon sections to bridge the river as planned and had to continue to shuttle vehicles and troops with outboard motor powered pontoons. The pontoon operations were delayed at first by low waters that made it difficult to load and unload the rubber pontoons with heavy equipment aboard. The level of water in the Colorado was eventually raised when they increased the flow of water from Davis Dam. This allowed the heavy equipment and weapons to move more smoothly across the river. Those officers present at the crossing site when the Commanding General of the 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division arrived recall an "informal change of command" in the Division Engineer Battalion that day.

The commander of the river-crossing site was Colonel Norman Erb, 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade. It was determined that the bridge could not be installed and all crossings would have to be by pontoon operations. Failure to notify units already on the road to the crossing site allowed the motorized units to stack up bumper-to-bumper. By the time someone realized what was happening, the trucks were jammed up for miles, too close together to back up or turn around, and unable get off the road to disperse. The Artillery liaison sections that were assigned to the battalions of the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade were delayed in this traffic jam at the crossing site and were unable to join their supported unit until well after the initial assault across the river. Luckily, the enemy forces were napping or just unable to take advantage of this lucrative target of command and combat support elements. The only successful float-bridge erected across the river during Desert Strike was one installed at Parker by the engineer units from the Utah National Guard. The engineer battalion continued to have difficulty in moving equipment across the river throughout the exercise. The fluctuating water level required constant relocation or maintenance of the launching sites on both banks of the river. By end of the next day, the liaison sections had reported to their respective infantry battalions and joined the Forward Air Controller (FAC) to set up their Fire Support Center. After attending the mission briefing, they set up their firing charts and prepared the fire support plans for both air and artillery support. After preparing the preplanned fires, intelligence targets and programmed concentrations, they briefed the infantry commanders on procedures for on-call fires.

The river crossing climaxed a week of intensive preparation with reconnaissance patrols along the river and training in pontoon operations by infantry units. While in the Oatman assembly area Captain Bobbie L. Nickell and First Sergeant Carl Lewis went on a daylight reconnaissance of their new Headquarters Battery position area near the river and noted a sign identifying a local farm as "Hulet Farms". Nickell was personally acquainted with members of the Hulet family who had operated farms and a flying service in Chandler prior to relocating to Needles, California. They soon spotted Dave Hulet, an employee, in a field operating a tractor planting honeydew melons. First Sergeant Lewis volunteered to operate the tractor while Captain Nickell engaged Hulet in conversation. Dave Hulet, in addition to farming, operated a flying school and crop dusting service out of the Needles airport and mentioned that while flying he had seen armored units moving into positions on the west bank of the river.

Hulet, an Army Air Corps officer during World War II, volunteered to drive up the West Side of the river in an attempt to locate their positions. That evening Dave loaded his wife and children into the family station wagon and drove north on the Calonia side of the river from Needles and did locate tank positions at the Boy Scout camp, a school, and at least one other position. All were in position to bring fire on any attempted river crossing. During the trip he managed to get his vehicle stuck in sand directly in front of one of the armored positions. While the helpful troops of the opposing force pushed his vehicle back on the road, his wife was busily writing down unit markings and vehicle ID numbers of the tanks and other equipment.

Nickell met with Hulet the next morning and was given a Federal Aviation Administration (FAA) map marked with the precise location, number, and identification markings of the tanks and support vehicles. The locations were translated into military coordinates and given to the Battalion S-2 Intelligence Center operated by Captain Johnson and Master Sergeant Lester

Matlock, Battalion Intelligence Sergeant. The information was sent to the Division Artillery G-2 and presumably on to 5<sup>th</sup> Division. Apparently these higher headquarters took no action because it was considered as "hearsay" information from a civilian source located in enemy territory. However, when the preparatory fires began in support of the river crossing, the 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery did fire on each of these positions with several volleys of battalion fire, the results were spectacular. At the completion of each fire mission, the fire for effect coordinates were given to the umpires, they then send them to the Opposing Force umpires. When they verified that there were tank units located at these coordinates and together with the artillery "position area survey"; the battalion was given credit for approximately twelve tank kills.

On Monday, 18 May the 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery began the echelon movement of their firing batteries forward. They crossed the river on the pontoons under the cover of darkness and moved forward into their firing positions. Only those elements of the battalion necessary to sustain continued operations for fire support of the infantry operations were moved across the river, this included elements of the headquarters battery. The battalion trains would move across the river at a later time. When the battalion trains, enlarged by the rear elements of Headquarters Battery, did receive orders to move across the river after dark they drove under blackout conditions along to the river road. When they arrived at the river crossing, mass confusion still existed and all vehicles were still massed too close.

Tuesday night 19 May, the battalion moved into their final positions. The move went well and all units were in position before daylight. The artillery battalion headquarters position was assigned the codename, "the ranch". The site had once been a ranch from many years past, nothing of the house or other facilities remained, but the ranch house area, approximately fifty yards square, was completely surrounded by tall tamarack trees. This layout was typical of the desert ranches established by early homesteaders; tamarack trees didn't take much water to survive and provided an ideal windbreak.

The only problem was, the tamarack tree is a natural home for scorpions and they did reproduce prolifically in this desolate desert environment. Once and a while you would find several of them on the ground or on a piece of equipment located under the trees. The Army umpire with the artillery headquarters was of oriental descent, and the troops had convinced him that although the scorpions didn't have wings, they could kind of fly (glide) down from the trees like a squirrel. He must have believed them because he placed his vehicle in the center of the tree-ringed area, right in the direct sun and heat. That was the only place where he felt comfortable enough to eat and sleep, away from the tress and out of "flying distance" of the scorpions. Nobody ever told him otherwise, he left the exercise with this new and important knowledge about flying scorpions and their love for the tamarack trees. Information that he would undoubtedly share with military personnel during future desert operations.

The artillery troops always felt safe from snakes during their night moves because the trucks made enough noise moving into position that the snakes would normally move out ahead of the unit. They found that this was not true along the Colorado River basin, which was literally inundated with sidewinder rattlesnakes. They would arise in the morning after moving into position and find the distinctive sidewinder tracks all through their vehicle tire tracks from the night before. They also learned to be particularly careful when digging in the trail spades of the howitzer because they would dig up nests of snakes in the soft dirt. One Active Army visitor stopped by the battalion supply section in Service Battery one day to ask for directions. He noticed some of the enlisted members digging and asked what they were digging for? They said "a rattlesnake" and his response was "what do you want to do that for?" Their answer was, "cause then we can kill it and won't have to worry about it tonight!"

The battalion position in the vicinity of Oatman had been in the rocky hills, rather than the soft desert along the river, and heavily inhabited by diamondback rattlesnakes. Captain Alvin J. Busby, Commander of Battery B, used his entire battery to form a single line to go through the position area to scare off the rattlers; he said that it seemed to work. During the course of the exercise, rattlesnakes bit a large number of soldiers, because they didn't realize that the rattlesnake, not unlike a human, couldn't survive for long in the extreme heat and direct

summer sun. The snake will seek the shade of any desert bush to survive and it takes a dim view of sharing it with some GI, also looking for a shady spot to get out of the heat and sun. In the case of the sidewinder, they just burrow under the dirt, leaving just its distinctive horns and eyes protruding above ground making them almost invisible to the naked eye.

The assault went well, on the southern front, Calonian forces retreated before a Nezonan thrust by the 2d Armored Division. The front was reported 10 miles west of Rice, California, which would be 46 miles from the river. The 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, 59<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment (Mech) (Arizona), commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Ernest J. McCulley, had spearheaded the attack at Parker and had secured Parker Dam from the Calonia forces and had established a strategic beachhead near Vidal on the Calonia side of the river. The 59<sup>th</sup> Infantry was part of the 191<sup>st</sup> Infantry Brigade (Mech) (USAR), with units from Montana, Utah and Arizona. Brigadier General J.P. Conner commanded the 191st Infantry Brigade.

To the north, enemy forces mainly the 1<sup>st</sup> Armored Division, was on the offensive along a lengthy front and had retaken an area south of Searchlight, Nevada, approximately 20 miles west of the Colorado River. It was reported that the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade would probably be pulled to the rear and placed in reserve on 21 May. Units were scheduled to complete annual training on Saturday, 23 May. Late on Wednesday, Colonel Jones contacted Brigadier General Hughes, DivArty Commander, and requested early release on Thursday morning from the exercise. He stated his desire to move the battalion to Parker, Arizona, clean and perform maintenance on equipment, pay the troops and give the personnel a little Rest & Recreation (R&R) before departing for home stations late Friday night.

General Hughes stated that he was very pleased with the performance of the battalion throughout the exercise. He particularly praised their outstanding accomplishment of the direct support mission to the infantry brigade. The 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery was attached to the 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division Artillery and it was their headquarters that had assigned the artillery battalion the tactical mission of direct support of the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade. As Such, Hughes directed that the artillery battalion would be relieved and excused from the exercise when the liaison officer from their replacement battalion reported and was briefed. The liaison officer from the replacement battalion with the 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry DivArty reported to Colonel Jones shortly after the advance detachment departed for Parker. After he was provided an ice cold drink and a long overdue shower, he was briefed by Major Walsh, Operations & Training Officer (S-3), and Master Sergeant Matlock furnished him with the intelligence Maps and overlays on the tactical situation. Jones notified General Hughes that the liaison officer had reported, had been briefed and the battalion was ready to "Close station and March order" (CSMO).

At that time Hughes informed Jones that the war had intensified with a single enemy plane roaring in at low altitude at 0507 hours that morning and dropped a simulated nuclear bomb on Luke Air Force Base. At least 5,100 of the 8,100 persons on the base had been killed or severely injured. There was total destruction of the entire base's reconnaissance planes, nine single-place RF101s and six twin-engine RB66s. He further stated that similar attacks were believed to have occurred at other Nezona air bases at the same time. If correct, more than half of Nezona's air force probably was destroyed. General Hughes again congratulated the battalion, expressed his personal thanks for a job well done and wished every-one a safe trip home. The battalion closed station and "passed in review", as they drove by the commander and staff at the Command Post of the 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade

The advanced detachment from the 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery departed for Parker early on the morning of Thursday, 21 May. The original point of contact in Parker was Dr. Sidney Boaz, Mayor, and former member of Battery A, Chandler. He provided several individuals to contact regarding a bivouac location for the battalion, including the Chairman of the Colorado Indian Tribe. Arrangements were made for a bivouac site and river related businesses were contacted regarding access to the riverfront for washing and cleaning of the motor vehicles, howitzers and other equipment. One of the businesses with large concrete multiple boat launching ramps invited the battalion to use his facilities. The welcome and generosity of the local citizens could not have been any greater as many residents along the river allowed their private yards to be used by the

units for washing howitzers and vehicles. The city authorized the use of a fire hydrant adjacent to the launching ramp to hose down the equipment; most batteries carried a section of fire hose and a hydrant wrench as part of their "supplemental" battery equipment.

The highway move to Parker was made as an administrative convoy movement; the war was over for the artillery battalion. As the battalion approached Earp, California, the route of march was changed to take the convoy over the pontoon bridge constructed by the Utah Army National Guard. The battalion had planned on a move over a pontoon bridge during the war, this didn't happen, but at least they could cross one on the way home. The troops of the battalion cheered the Utah guardsmen as they crossed. The officers and enlisted men of the battalion could now say that they were the only unit of the 5<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division to move across the Colorado River over a military pontoon bridge.

The units occupied their bivouac site and started cleaning equipment, performing equipment maintenance and stowing personal gear. By now, the townspeople were all aware that the battalion was from Arizona. They welcomed them as the conquering heroes and the local populace furnished ice tea and sandwiches to the men while they worked. The battalions stay in Parker was enjoyable for all the troops, some even cut the legs out of their fatigues, pulled off their boots and swam while they washed the trucks in the river. After two week in the desert, It didn't take a genius to figure that it would be a "great time in the 'ol town that night!" The battalion was to return and renew acquaintances the following year when ordered to Parker over a holiday weekend to combat a threat from the Hell's Angels motorcycle gang.

Captain Kroger, the Adjutant and Command Sergeant Major West arrived in Parker early on the morning of Friday, 22 May from Kingman with the unit payrolls. The units continued to clean and perform maintenance on all their equipment until late afternoon. Units conducted motor stables and reloaded all unit equipment on their vehicles in preparation for the move to home stations. Commanders conducted Muster and paid the troops prior to the evening meal. After supper, commanders briefed their personnel on the movement home and released everyone until 2000 hours, except for the drivers and assistant drivers. The battalion departed Parker at 2200 hours on Friday night and arrived back at home stations at 0600 hours Saturday, 23 May.

The 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade, 222 Transportation Company and 3666<sup>th</sup> Light Maintenance Company were relieved from the exercise late Thursday afternoon and moved to bivouac areas near Needles and Yucca. After performing maintenance and payment of troops, the Southern units departed on Friday and the rest of the infantry brigade and support units departed for home stations on Saturday, 23 May.

### **Emergencies on the home front**

Guardsmen have ever been ready for major occasions of ceremony, for emergency and disaster. As mentioned before, Captain Buckey O'Neill and the Prescott Grays at the hanging of convicted murderer Dilda in Prescott handled one emergency occasion. In 1896 the Fitzsimmons-Maher World's Heavyweight Boxing Championship fight was scheduled to come off in the Arizona Territory, contemptuous of a Congressional Law making prizefighting within the territories a crime. The Secretary of the Interior requested the assistance of Governor L. C. Hughes to prevent this and several companies of the guard were called out to prevent the fight. The Governor and Adjutant General Ed Schwartz placed the work in charge of Major R. Allyn Lewis, First Arizona Infantry and Later Adjutant General. Lewis learned promoter Dean Stuart intended to load his fighters and fight attendants on a Southern Pacific train in the El Paso yards, steal into the San Simon valley about daybreak, two days before the fight was billed, and finish the fight in time to take the single east-bound train the same afternoon. Lewis dropped companies D and F from Tucson at Bowie, under command of Captain John M. Trayor. The troops remained there about a week, while Major Lewis kept watch at headquarters in El Paso. A suggestion to go across the border to Jaurez was defeated by the refusal of the Mexican authorities, with which the State Department in Washington had been in communication. The fighters and their admirers finally were started eastward on the Southern Pacific and the Fitzsimmon-Maher fight was moved just across the Rio Grande at a point near Langtree, Texas.

The Territorial Insane Asylum was on fire on September 5, 1911, and Company B was called to fight the flames. An amazing utilization of the Guard was the 1924 "Sheep-dip Expedition" to Yuma, Arizona. As the dreaded hoof and mouth disease raged in California, Arizona placed quarantine on the movement of persons from California into Arizona. Soldiers of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry were dispatched to Yuma to serve from March 20 until April 18, 1924. All cars were stopped and run through sheep-dip vats. All persons were required to bathe and to have their clothing and contents of their automobiles fumigated.

In addition to the significance of the Guard's Camp Perry emblem becoming the official Arizona Flag, another example of an important ceremony was the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry participation in the dedication of the Lee's Ferry Bridge across the Colorado River in northern Arizona, June 14 and 15, 1929.

The next armed conflict involving the Arizona National Guard was in 1934 and later aptly dubbed "the Dam'est War" by then Major Franklin I. Pomeroy, Task Force Commander. In 1934, the California Metropolitan Water District began construction of a diversion dam on the Colorado River in the vicinity of Parker, Arizona. Build a dam they might, but at least Arizona authorities could prevent the Californians from anchoring the dam on Arizona soil. Arizona's Governor, Benjamin B. Moeur, ordered a platoon of the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry under the command of Pomeroy to prevent the Californian invasion of Arizona soil. For eight months, from March 19 until November 11, 1934, the Arizona National Guard sat on the east bank of the Colorado with machine guns in place. A landmark decision of the United States Supreme Court ruled that Arizona could not stop the construction and the "dam" war ended.

Through the early and mid 1930's the Arizona State Prison at Florence, Arizona was the laughing-stock of the nation. Inmates came and went at will. Escapes were an everyday report in the press. On July 15, 1935 a proclamation by the Governor declared an emergency at the Arizona State Prison, Florence. A detachment of four officers and fifty-nine enlisted men under the command of Captain Walter K. Tweedy proceeded to the prison and reported to the warden for instructions. Upon completion of the detachment duties at the prison on September 15, 1936 the warden John G. Eager, presented the following letter to Major LeRoy Weyrick, who commanded the rear detachment in Florence: "Dear Major: In you and your men leaving our grounds, I want to say that as far as I can see you have left everything as near the way you found it as was humanly possible. I want to further add that during the two months that your men guarded our walls, the service and conduct of every one of your men was most satisfactory, and I want to especially thank you and Capt. Tweedy as well as every man under you, for your courteous and efficient service, and I hope that I will never have to call on you again. Once again let me offer my sincere thanks. Sincerely, signed - J. G. Eager, Warden. P. S. Will you personally convey to General Tuthill, my sincere appreciation for his cooperation. J.G.E." Not one escape occurred during that period of time with the Arizona National Guard manning the walls.

Not always noteworthy utilization of the guard was several occasions of duty during labor strikes in Clifton, Arizona between copper miners and Phelps Dodge Mining Company and the Salt River lettuce strike between the agriculture workers and lettuce growers. This pitting of the guard against the citizens of Arizona did not always present great public relations and good will between the parties involved, but in most cases, both labor and management cooperated with a minimum of violence. A report of an early Morenci labor strife was covered in the Phoenix Gazette.

"This story began in 1903 when the eight-hour law had just gone into effect and the men sweated out 10-hour days in the underground mines rejoiced - rejoiced until payday when they learned that their pay had been cut along with the hours of work.

Angry miners struck for the same amount of pay they received before the hours worked were cut. No agreement could be reached between the miners at two large companies - Phelps Dodge and Arizona Copper.

Days passed. Food and money were gone. Families were hungry. Then the trouble started. Jack Laustenneau, an agitator sent into Morenci from Chicago, began to stir up the hungry miners.

Word was passed that the men were to arm themselves and meet at the Humbolt Mine in the center of town and make a raid on the large company stores. Other citizens armed themselves to guard the stores.

The Women of the Town, fearing for the lives of their men, gathered in a little church and prayed that somehow the imminent battle would somehow be averted. Meanwhile, the battle lines had been drawn up, both sides wielding rifles and pistols. The tension was mounting to fever pitch.

Then it happened! Wham! The sky opened up and poured a roaring torrent of water, drenching the prospective combatants. Nothing could be heard above the roar of the storm and visibility was cut to zero. The combatants scurried for shelter. Some of them ran for their homes, others sought refuge in a nearby mine. The storm raged on, causing a flood that sent water tumbling through gullies and swept houses down Morenci Canyon.

When the storm subsided, both sides were completely dispersed, the fight taken out of them by the storm. The town was dazed. More than a score of persons lost their lives in that cloudburst, but this loss was nothing compared to the number that might have been killed in the impending gun battle that the storm interrupted.

Before the dazed combatants could start the fight, the Arizona National Guard, under the command of Col. James H. McClintock, arrived on the scene and soon had the situation well in hand."

Major General A. M. Tuthill, who was a resident of Morenci at the time, said, "I hate to think of the bloodshed that would have taken place if somebody had fired a gun or accidentally set one off and started that battle raging."

One of the Guard's more regrettable tours of duty concerned the quiet town of Short Creek, located on the Arizona Strip south of the Utah border. Short Creek was a little town like most typical remote farming communities with typical people, except that it wasn't typical, it was a polygamist community. Otherwise, the residents of the town were like all people - some were cleaner than others, some were dirtier than others. Some homes were better than others - some worse. Crowded conditions in the community could not be paralleled anywhere else. Over 250 children lived in the houses of the town. Most of the youngsters of Short Creek wore braids down their backs and old-fashioned clothes, as did their mothers.

In the early-morning hours of Sunday July 26, 1953, several hundred Arizona state officials and police officers moved into the Mormon community of Short Creek, to serve warrants on thirty-six men and eighty-six women. Officials staging the raid believed they were rescuing the community's children from a life of bondage and immorality.

Shortly after seven o'clock the raid, ordered by Governor Howard Pyle, resulted in the arrest of all adult members of the community, except five, on "conspiracy" charges, which include polygamy. The members of the raiding party included highway patrolmen, liquor control officers, sheriff's deputies and special deputies. The Arizona Attorney General, Ross F. Jones, told newsmen that the state would seek levying of fines which would act as liens against United Effort Plan properties in Short Creek. This action, he said would "abolish for once and 'for all' this polygamist community in northern Mohave County. He indicated that he would also seek a writ to "abate the nuisance" of polygamist practices at Short Creek. Oddly enough, this raid was the third on the Mormon community in Short Creek, the two previous ones being in 1935 and 1944, which also dealt with disruption of the community and the separation of the families.

The Arizona National Guard provided a small detachment of personnel to support this operation by providing communications and a field kitchen facility to feed the population of the town and

the officers participating in the raid. Captain Frank E. Schaffer, Jr. and Chief Warrant Officer, CW2 Neal E. Wagoner of Company E and Master Sergeant Reuben M. Wise, Heavy Mortar Company, Phoenix and Glendale respectively, headed the support detachment. Corporal Jerry F. DeWitt, 3666<sup>th</sup> Light Maintenance Company, Phoenix, set up and operated a communications center for the news media. News stories from Short Creek were filed direct from the center by trunk line service at Sky Harbor in Phoenix. The field kitchen facility was operated by a seven-member cook detail from Company I, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry, Flagstaff, that included Master Sergeant Henry L. Schaeffer, Sergeant Frank Martinez, Sergeant Robert P. Morison, Corporal Guillermo Ceballos, Private First Class Edward Goitia and Privates Richard C. Flores and Albert B. Casados.

Governor Pyle termed the activities of the United Effort Plan members at Short Creek an "insurrection". All the men were assembled at the schoolhouse where Judge M. S. Gibbons committed them to the sheriff by nine o'clock that first morning. Shortly after a break for breakfast the women were brought before the jurist and eight were sent to jail in Kingman. The others, most with babies in arms, were left to care for their children pending juvenile hearings. Originally, there were 36 men, 86 women, known as their wives, and 263 children in Short Creek.

On Wednesday 29 July, Preble E. Pettit, State Welfare Commissioner, announced that the movement of the first group of juveniles out of the state-abated Short Creek polygamist colony was not expected for about two weeks. Pettit said a member of his staff from Kanab, Utah, had informed him that juvenile court hearing to determine the disposition of the children in the colony started before Judge Lorna Lockwood of Maricopa County and Judge J. W. Faulkner of Mohave County. The judges visited the Short Creek homes on Tuesday to study living conditions.

A mass evacuation of more than 200 women and children from the community was planned in the wake of mass escapes by some of the women and their families. Six buses, two from Flagstaff and four from Phoenix, were initially scheduled to load the women and children for the 400-mile trip to Phoenix. Seventy-six persons in all had fled the community since the raid. None of them were men. This move was further considered by the reports that male cultists would gain freedom from jail to attempt a "counter attack" on Short Creek although all male polygamists arrested were still confined to jail in Kingman. At the same time, attempts to post bond for some of the 31 male cultists jailed were proving to be successful. Attorney General Jones said "if the Mohave county attorney, Carl Hammond, examines their collateral for bond and finds everything in proper form, they will have to be released.

Meanwhile welfare workers opened the town's lone grocery store. The shelves were reported stocked and later villagers would be allowed to operate it alone. Robert L. Bouvea, a supervisor for the state welfare department, said the Short Creek grocery store was reopened because some mothers could not travel the half-mile to the field kitchen with their many children. Bouvea further stated that under present arrangements the state would transport those children destined for foster homes to the Utah community of St. George from where airplanes would fly them to Phoenix.

A close watch had been kept on the men after being jailed and the Arizona Highway Patrol said some of the prisoners were overheard planning to drive to Short Creek in trucks as soon as they were released to free the women and children. Almost two weeks later, when the prisoners were finally released from the Kingman jail the Arizona National Guard was directed to close operations and depart back to home stations to avoid any possible retaliation or confrontation with the released male residents of Short Creek. The detachment march ordered their field kitchen, communications center and had departed for the Flagstaff Armory three hours later. After the state agencies began to return control of this polygamous village back to the residents, the community eventually again became self-sustaining.

The political uproar over this raid of Short Creek was vocal, long lasting and disastrous for Governor Pyle. Much of this sentiment flowed over onto the many state agencies involved in the raid, including the National Guard, even though they were only present in a support role. This

feeling was expressed humorously in Ray Busey's Home Town Gossip column in the Arizona Free Press and the serious side in the Arizona (Tucson) Daily Star.

Ray Busey's Home Town Gossip, 31 July 1953.

"Since the quelling of the Short Creek "insurrection" by Governor Pyle, almost single handedly (according to Arizona Republic headlines of last Monday) I've heard no end of jokes at the expense of our publicity hunting chief executive."

"Among all of them I think the most entertaining one comes from the loafers down at the corner pool hall who are industriously organizing what they have dubbed, "Amalgamated Order of Pyle's Short Creek Raiders." An explanatory paragraph on their mimeographed application blank has the following to say: "A strictly militant organization that recruits only political climbers who are extremely publicity conscious and courageous enough to bear arms against kindergarten insurrectionists."

"At the bottom of the application blank attention is called to the fact that Pyle's Short Creek Raiders will be furnished side arms and portable artillery from secret emergency funds allocated by the recent legislature."

"It ended with this: "Applicant agrees that at no time during his or her enlistment will radio or television appearances by made by the individual in question, all such appearances being reserved for Chief Raider J. Howard Pyle, whose oratorical genius has made such astounding successes of Washington breakfasts, Boy Scout and National Guard encampments and prior Short Creek raids."

"Short Creek Hippodrome", Arizona (Tucson) Daily Star, 8 August 1953. (Excerpt)

"But the unanswered questions in this case seem to be first, why was the practice permitted to continue this long when no decent society could defend it for a moment on either moral or legal grounds? And second, why did it take the Arizona National Guard, the Arizona Highway Patrol, officers from Mojave County and a caravan of radio men, reporters and photographers to make a pre-dawn raid on a defenseless farm village?"

The National Guard and other State agencies involved in this raid of Short Creek survived this incident, however it ended the political career of Governor Pyle. Short Creek still exists today as Arizona City.

The beginning of the "100-year" floods of the 1960's started the guard into becoming a highly effective emergency relief and rescue force during flood duty. The flood of 1965/66 proved that all bridges across the Salt River through Phoenix were inadequate, except for the old Mill Avenue bridge in Tempe and Central Avenue bridge in Phoenix, to handle the later frequent 100-year flood. The high volume of water that had to be released down the Salt destroyed the approaches to all other bridges. Lesson learned; the replacement bridges constructed were much longer in span to accommodate any future water releases from the "100-year flood." As always, in flood emergencies, a major resource of Army Guard aviation is required in rescue, life saving evacuation and other hazardous missions. Throughout the history of the Arizona National Guard, search and rescue has always been a major mission assigned to all units and has been credited with successfully saving numerous persons.

## Retiring the Colors

Newly elected Governor Sam Goddard appointed and promoted Colonel Joseph Ahee to Major General, Adjutant General, Arizona National Guard on 1 March 1965. Colonel Ahee began his military career in 1933 when he enlisted in the Arizona Army National Guard and served for approximately one year. Upon Graduation from the University of Arizona in June 1938, he was commissioned Second Lieutenant, Cavalry, from ROTC and served as an officer in the Regular

Army until his retirement on 28 February 1965. He served as Cavalry Troop and Tank Battalion Commander in Europe during World War II. Among his many duty assignments were Senior Army Advisor, 40<sup>th</sup> Armored Division, California Army National Guard, Chief, Organization and Training Division, National Guard Bureau and was Commander Fort Douglas, Utah at the time of his retirement.

On 1 June 1965 the command of the 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Artillery transferred from Lieutenant Colonel Jones to Major Chester A. Smith Jr. Jones was promoted to Colonel and was assigned as Deputy Commander, 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade, where he served until transferred to the Retired Reserve on 16 July 1965. Major Smith was a second generation Arizona Guardsman, having learned the business from his father; Second Lieutenant Chester A. Smith, Sr. a member of Battery E prior to World War II and mobilized with the unit in 1940. Major Smith entered on Active Duty on 16 December 1941 and served in Canada and the Asiatic-Pacific Theater. After return from Active Duty, he enlisted in Battery C, 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion on 2 March 1948 as First Sergeant. On 3 January 1949 he was commissioned a Second Lieutenant, Field Artillery, Arizona Army National Guard. He served as Battery Commander and staff officer within the artillery with his last assignment as Executive Officer before assuming command.

On 4 January 1967 Major General John C. Wilson was again appointed Adjutant General of the Arizona National Guard. In recognition of his many years of outstanding service and recognition of his devotion to United States and the State of Arizona he was promoted to Lieutenant General, Arizona National Guard on 17 June 1967. Wilson continued to serve as adjutant General until his retirement on 15 January 1969.

General Orders Number 75, Office of the Adjutant General of Arizona, dated November 28, 1967, deactivated the 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry and reorganized it as the 258<sup>th</sup> Military Police Brigade (Sep) with the 1581<sup>st</sup>, 1582d and 1583d Military Police Battalions, plus Transportation Corps units, effective December 7, 1967. This reorganization structured the Arizona Army troop organizations as listed below.

New Unit	Old Unit	Location	Commander
Hq National Guard Az	Same	Phoenix	MG John C. Wilson
Hq & Hq Det, NG Az	Same	Phoenix	1LT Robert J. Fink. Jr
3666 Ordnance Co (DS)	Same	Phoenix	CPT Lloyd W. Fugate
108 <sup>th</sup> Army Band	Same	Phoenix	CW2 Myron W. Derbaum
123 PIO Det (FS)	Same	Phoenix	CPT Jay Brashear
258 <sup>th</sup> Engr Co (Lt Equip)	Co B, 2d Bn, 158 Inf	Phoenix	1LT Howard J. Ferguson
997 <sup>th</sup> Med Co, Air Amb	New Organization	Phoenix	MAJ Jack H. DeWitt
996 <sup>th</sup> Med Co, Armed Cav	New Organization	Glendale	CPT Lawrence A. Wise III
Arizona Military Academy	Same	Phoenix	MAJ Richard A. Colson
Headquarters, 258 MP Bde		Phoenix	BG Charles W. Fernald
HHD, 258 MP Bde w/ Admin, Mess, Maint, Med & Chap Aug.	HHC, 258 <sup>th</sup> Inf Bde	Phoenix	1LT Harold W. Sciotto
Headquarters, 1581 <sup>st</sup> MP Battalion, Army		Tucson	LTC Joel C. White Jr.
HHD, 1581 <sup>st</sup> MP Bn w/Pers, Mess & Med Aug	HHC, 1 <sup>st</sup> Bn, 158 Infantry	Tucson	CPT A. L. Shipley
Co A (-3 Plt) 1581 MP Bn	2d Rifle Plt, Co A 1/158	Tucson	CPT John Jackson
3d Plt, Co A, 1581 MP Bn	Co A (-2 Rifle Plt), 1/158	Nogales	1LT Armando G. Felix
Co B (-3d Plt) 1581 MP Bn	1 <sup>st</sup> ,2d,3d Rifle Plt, Co B, 1/158	Tucson	CPT William R. Wolf
3d Plt, Co B, 1581 MP Bn	Co A (-3d Rifle Plt), 2/158	Safford	2LT David W. Green
Co C (-3d Plt), 1581 MP Bn	Co C (-2d Rifle Plt), 2/158	Douglas	CPT William D. Smith
3d Plt, Co C, 1581 MP Bn	2d Rifle Plt, Co C, 1/158	Bisbee	2LT Miguel A. Leyva

Headquarters, 1583d MP Battalion, Army HHD, 1583 MP Bn w/Mess, Main, Med & Chap Aug.	HHC, 3d Bn, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Glendale Glendale	MAJ Charles W. Upchurch 2LT Stephen L. Hermann
1160 <sup>th</sup> MP Det, Con Fac (Tm MD)	New Organization	Glendale	MAJ Edward M. Quillin
1156 MP Guard Co (-3d Plt) w/Pers Aug	Co B (-2d Rifle Plt), 3/158		1LT Donald H. Kersey
3d Plt, 1156 MP Guard Co	2d Rifle Plt, Co A, 3/158	Kingman	2LT Billy A. Gumm
1155 MP Guard Co (-3d Plt) w/Pers Aug	Co A (-2d Rifle Plt), 3/158	Flagstaff	1LT Pedro Legleu
3d Plt, 1155 MP Guard Co	1 <sup>st</sup> Trk Plt, 222 Trans Co	Winslow	2LT Everett W. Kyle
1154 MP Escort Guard Co w/Pers Aug	Co C, 2d Bn, 158 Inf	Yuma	CPT Chester T. Janosky
Headquarters, 1120 TC Battalion, Truck HHD, 1120 TC Bn	HHC, 2d Bn, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Phoenix Phoenix	LTC Harry P. Dunfee CPT Wilber B. Duvall
2220 TC Co, Lt/Med (-2 Lt Trk Plts) w/Pers Aug	New Organization	Tucson	2LT Michael G. Fields
1 <sup>st</sup> Lt Trk Plt, 2220 TC Co, Lt/Med Trk	Co B (-1 <sup>st</sup> , 2d, 3d Rifle Plt) 1 <sup>st</sup> Bn, 158 <sup>th</sup> Inf	Coolidge	2LT Oscar E. Alvared, Jr
2d Lt Trk Plt, 2220 TC Co, Lt/Med Trk	2d Rifle Plt, Co A, 2.158	Claypool	2lt Joe Rios
2221 <sup>st</sup> TC Co, Lt/Med Trk (-2d Lt Trk Plt)	Co C, 3d Bn, 158 Inf	Phoenix	1LT Dudley C. Gibson
2d Lt Trk Plt, 2221 TC Co, Lt/Med	2d Rifle Plt, Co B, 3/158	Prescott	2LT Robert W. Cowan

On the Athletic Field at Phoenix College, the entire regiment formed for the last time on December 3<sup>rd</sup> and in a sentimental moment retired their Colors. In the presence of the regiment, and with scores of its old veterans in attendance, the regiment and each battalion thereof, presented their Historic Colors to Jack Williams, Governor of Arizona. The regiment then Passed in Review to the tune of their march the "Gun'l-Hoyer" arrangement of Gungal's Mule March, and the Day of the Bushmaster was over and this splendid Arizona organization passed into history.

10 December 1967, the 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery, commanded by Major John L. Johnson, again reorganized under a new TOE. This reorganization increased the unit's equipment and strength. This latest reorganization also redesignated the organization as the 1st Battalion, 180th Artillery.

Unit		Station	Commander
Headquarters, 1 <sup>st</sup> Battalion, 180 <sup>th</sup> Artillery		Mesa	MAJ John L. Johnson
HHD, 1 <sup>st</sup> Bn, 180 <sup>th</sup> Arty	HHD, 1 How Bn, 180 Arty	Mesa	CPT Leo E. Mahoney
Btry A, 1 <sup>st</sup> Bn, 180 <sup>th</sup> Arty	Btry A, 1 How Bn, 180 Arty	Chandler	CPT Robert W. Taylor
Btry B, 1 <sup>st</sup> Bn, 180 <sup>th</sup> Arty	Btry B, 1 How Bn, 180 Arty	Casa Grande	CPT Jimmie J. Carpenter
Btry C, 1 <sup>st</sup> Bn, 180 <sup>th</sup> Arty	Btry C, 1 How Bn, 180 Arty	Tempe	CPT Edward E. Pomeroy, Jr
Sv Btry, 1 <sup>st</sup> Bn, 180 <sup>th</sup> Arty	Sv Btry, 1 How Bn, 180 Arty	Mesa	CPT Lavern May

Major Johnson enlisted in the U.S. Navy Reserve while still attending high school in Chandler. Later enlisting in the U.S. Army where he was assigned to the 15<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion and cadre at the Second Infantry Division Weapons and Tactics School, Fort Lewis, WA. After his release from Active duty he joined Battery A, 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion, Arizona Army National Guard. He was appointed Second Lieutenant in 1951 and served for twenty years in the 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion and 1<sup>st</sup> Howitzer Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery. He was promoted to Colonel in 1972 and served as Operations and Training officer (G3) and Director Personnel and Community Activities (DPCA), Arizona Army National Guard; Deputy Commander, 258<sup>th</sup> Military Police Brigade; Commander, 153d Field Artillery Group and Commander, Navajo Army Depot,

**Bellemont, Arizona. Johnson was employed as a National Guard Military Technician while serving in the 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion and remained as a technician until his retirement in 1984 with over 37 years military service.**

**Brigadier General Charles W. Fernald continued as Commander, 258<sup>th</sup> Military Police Brigade (Sep) and was later promoted to Major General and appointed Adjutant General, Arizona National Guard on 1 September 1972. Fernald served as Adjutant General until his retirement on 7 July 1975.**

**The 1<sup>st</sup> Volunteer Infantry, 1<sup>st</sup> Arizona Infantry, 158<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment, 158<sup>th</sup> Regimental Combat Team and 258<sup>th</sup> Infantry Brigade, along with the list of hundreds of pages of it's former members, moved into history at the close of this exciting 100 year period of the Arizona Army National Guard. Colonel Orville Cochran, State Public Information Officer, commented on the Retirement of the Colors, "It is a wild statement, but possibly reasonable, that more than 250,000 to 300,000 men have passed through the ranks of this splendid Arizona organization in the past century."**

## **Colonel John L. Johnson**

**Colonel Johnson was born the child of two parents on 30 October 1929 in Chandler, Arizona where he grew up and graduated from Chandler High School in 1947. His military education includes the U.S. Army Field Artillery School where he attended the Battery Officer Course, the Field Artillery Advance Course and Nuclear and Chemical Weapons Employment Course, Command and General Staff College and the Senior Officer Legal Course.**

**He enlisted in the U.S. Navy Reserve while still attending high school, later enlisting in the U.S. Army where he was assigned to the 15<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion and cadre at the Second Infantry Division Weapons and Tactics School. After his release from Active duty he joined Battery A, 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion, Arizona Army National Guard. He was appointed Second Lieutenant in 1951 and served as Battery Commander, Staff officer, Operations and Training officer and Commander, 1<sup>st</sup> Battalion, 180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery. After twenty years in the 480<sup>th</sup>/180<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery, Colonel Johnson served as Operations and Training officer (G3) and Director Personnel and Community Activities (DPCA), Arizona Army National Guard; Deputy Commander, 258<sup>th</sup> Military Police Brigade; Commander, 153d Field Artillery Group and Commander, Navajo Army Depot. Colonel Johnson was employed as a National Guard Military Technician while serving in the 480<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion and remained as a technician until his retirement in 1984 with over 37 years military service.**

**His military decorations and awards include the Legion of Merit, Meritorious Service Medal, Army Commendation Medal, National Guard Bureau Meritorious Service Award, Department of the Army Order of Aaron and Hur Award, Field Artillery Order of Saint Barbara Award, Arizona Medal of Valor, Arizona Meritorious Service Medal and numerous other service medals and ribbons.**